

SWEET'S
ANGLO-SAXON PRIMER

SWEET'S
ANGLO-SAXON PRIMER

REVISED THROUGHOUT BY

NORMAN DAVIS

Professor of English Language in the
University of Glasgow

OXFORD
AT THE CLARENDON PRESS

Oxford University Press, Amen House, London E.C. 4.

GLASGOW NEW YORK TORONTO MELBOURNE WELLINGTON

BOMBAY CALCUTTA MADRAS KARACHI CAPE TOWN IBADAN

Geoffrey Cumberlege, Publisher to the University

<i>First edition</i>	1882
<i>Second edition</i>	1883
<i>Third edition</i>	1884
<i>Fourth edition</i>	1887
<i>Fifth edition</i>	1888
<i>Sixth edition</i>	1891
<i>Seventh edition</i>	1894
<i>Reprinted 1897,</i>	1901
<i>Eighth edition</i>	1905

PRINTED IN GREAT BRITAIN

PREFACE

SWEET'S *Primer* first appeared in 1882, and was last revised for the eighth edition of 1905. It is not surprising that in the interval methods of presentation should have changed. The *Primer*, though designed as an introduction to Sweet's *Reader*, has tended to fall out of use, but nothing has replaced it; and the *Reader* itself has often been used as a beginner's book, for which it was never intended.

In the belief that an elementary introduction on the lines of the *Primer* is essential, I have tried in the present revision to preserve the policy and the scale of Sweet's work, while rearranging it very considerably in detail. In the grammar—especially in treating the verb, where Sweet's classification has failed to find acceptance—I have sought to present the facts, with as few technical terms as possible, in the same groups as students will find when they come to more advanced books. The bare outlines of relevant phonology have been rearranged with the same object, though I fear that so concise a statement cannot be readily intelligible. Under the paradigms the lists of similarly inflected words have been much increased, and the section on syntax, especially on word-order, has been expanded. In so limited a space the grammar could not aim at anything like completeness. It sets out to cover the texts in this book, and all examples are drawn from them; but I hope that it will serve also as a working elementary grammar for wider use.

The texts have been considerably modified. To provide fuller examples of natural Old English prose, not translated from Latin, I have extended the extracts from the *Chronicle* and added passages from Ælfric's prefaces; and to widen the range of interest I have included well-known passages from the Old English translation of Bede, from *Alexander's Letter*, and from the *Leechdoms*. To make room for these I have had to omit some of the Biblical extracts, and all the sentences which formed the first section. This I have done reluctantly, for they were skilfully chosen to exhibit forms. But I believe—though the changes have probably raised the general level of difficulty a little—that readers will find consecutive prose so much more interesting than disconnected sentences that they will in fact learn more readily from it. All the texts have been revised (all

but I and VII collated with the manuscripts), and a few passages slightly altered accordingly.

I have followed Sweet's practice of normalizing on a conventional Early West Saxon basis, unhistorical as it is, for it remains the best foundation for further study. To ease the transition to later texts I have left one page; extract IX, in the spelling of the manuscripts.

For advice and help in the preparation of this edition I am grateful to Professor C. L. Wrenn, to Dr. C. T. Onions, who read a proof, and especially to Mr. Kenneth Sisam and Miss Celia Sisam, who read the manuscript.

N. D.

UNIVERSITY OF GLASGOW

September 1952

CONTENTS

GRAMMAR

TEXTS

I. FROM THE GOSPEL OF ST. MATTHEW	62
II. OLD TESTAMENT PIECES	66
III. SAMSON	70
IV. FROM THE CHRONICLE	73
V. PREFACES BY ÆLFRIC	78
VI. KING EDMUND	81
VII. FROM THE OLD ENGLISH TRANSLATION OF BEDE'S <i>ECCLESIASTICAL HISTORY</i>	88
VIII. FROM 'ALEXANDER'S LETTER TO ARISTOTLE'	92
IX. MEDICINAL RECIPES	95
NOTES	96
GLOSSARY	106

GRAMMAR

1. The oldest stage of English, from the earliest records (about A.D. 700) to soon after the Norman Conquest, is now generally called 'Old English', though the name 'Anglo-Saxon' is still often used. There were several dialects of Old English. This grammar deals only with the *West Saxon* dialect, the most important for the study of the literature; and with the early form of it—that is, the language of about the time of King Alfred.

SOUNDS

VOWELS

2. The letters representing vowels in O.E.¹ had nearly the same values as in Latin. The following table gives the basic vowels and diphthongs, with examples of their occurrence in stressed syllables, and keywords as a guide to approximate pronunciation. These words are drawn as far as possible from Modern English; but the sounds must have been 'purer' vowels like those of most continental languages, and occasionally French or German illustrations have seemed preferable. It is important to distinguish short vowels from long, which in this book are marked by (ː).

a as in G. mann	nama 'name'
ā „ father	stān 'stone'
æ „ hat	glæd 'glad'
ǣ the same, lengthened	dǣd 'deed'
e as in set	etan 'eat'
ē „ G. see	hē 'he'
i „ sit	cwic 'alive'
ī „ machine	wīn 'wine'

¹ Names of languages are abbreviated thus: *F.*, French; *G.*, German; *Mn.E.*, Modern English; *O.E.*, Old English. Such other abbreviations as are not self-evident are explained on p. 106.

o as in hot (but closer)	god 'god'
ō „ G. so	gōd 'good'
u „ put	sunu 'son'
ū „ rude	nū 'now'
y „ F. tu	synn 'sin'
ȳ „ G. grūn	brȳd 'bride'
ea = æ + a	eald 'old'
ēa = ē + a	ġeast 'east'
eo = e + o	eorl 'nobleman'
ēo = ē + o	dēop 'deep'
ie = i + e	ieltu 'age'
īe = ī + e	hīeran 'hear'

The diphthongs were pronounced with the stress on the first element.

Short *a* before *m* or *n* was often replaced in spelling by *o*: *noma*, *monn* for *nama*, *mann*. In this position the sound evidently was, or could be, between *a* and *o*.

From the position of the tongue in articulation, *ī*, *ē*, *æ*, *ȳ* are described in phonetic terms as 'front' vowels, *ū*, *ō*, *u* as 'back'.

CONSONANTS

3. The letters representing consonants were pronounced wherever they were written. So *c* in *cnāwan* 'know', *g* in *gnīdan* 'rub', *w* in *writan* 'write' were all sounded. Similarly, consonants written double were pronounced double, or long, as in Italian. Thus the *n*-sound in *sunne* 'sun' must be distinguished from that in *sunu* 'son' just as that in Mn.E. *penknife* differs from that in *penny*.

Most of the consonants were sounded much as in Mn.E. Some of the letters differed in form from their modern equivalents, and two special signs are usually preserved in modern editions—*þ* and *ð*. Both of these were used indifferently for the two sounds of *th*, in *thin* and in *then*. In this book only *þ* is used, except in extract IX.

Similarly, *f* and *s*, in addition to their modern values, could represent respectively the sounds of *v* and *z*, letters which were not normally used in O.E. These three letters, *f*, *s*, *þ*, had the sounds of *f*, *s*, and *th* in *thin* ('breathed' or 'voiceless') initially and finally in accented words; next to 'voiceless' consonants (such as *p*, *t*); and when double: *full* 'full', *lēof* 'dear'; *sunu*, *wæs* 'was'; *þencan* 'think', *wearþ* 'became'; *æfter* 'after', *fæst* 'firm'; *offrian* 'offer', *blissian* 'rejoice', *sippan* 'after'. They had the sounds of *v*, *z*, and *th* in *then* ('voiced') when single between vowels, or between a vowel and another 'voiced' sound (such as *l*, *r*, *m*, *n*): *lufian* 'love', *ċēosan* 'choose', *brōþor* 'brother'; *ċeorfan* 'cut', *efne* 'even', *māþm* 'treasure'; and probably in words like *of*, *is* in unstressed position.

h initially had the same sound as now: *hē*, *hūs* 'house'. Elsewhere it had the sound of *ch* in Scots *loch* after back vowels and after consonants: *hēah* 'high', *þōhte* 'thought', *Wealh* 'Welshman'; but of *ch* in German, *nicht* after front vowels: *fēhp* 'receives', *riht* 'right'. *hw*, as in *hwæt* 'what', *hwil* 'while', had the sound of Mn.E. *wh* as pronounced in northern England and in Scotland. The other groups *hl*, *hn*, *hr* differed from *l*, *n*, *r* as *wh* differs from *w*—that is, they were made in the same way but 'unvoiced', *hl* being nearly the same as Welsh *ll*: *hlāford* 'lord', *hnappian* 'doze', *hrape* 'quickly'.

r initially was probably trilled, as in Scots: *ræd* 'advice', *rīdan* 'ride'. Finally and before a consonant it was probably made with the tip of the tongue curved back, as in south-western dialects of Mn.E. and in American: *ār* 'mercy', *eard* 'country', *feorh* 'life'.

c and *g* each had a back (guttural) and a front (palatal) pronunciation. The latter is printed *ċ*, *ġ* in this book.

c had the sound of *k* before, and when final after, back vowels and *ȳ*; sometimes also before *ē*, in words which may generally be recognized by their modern pronunciation with *k*: *cann* 'know', *cōl* 'cool', *cuman* 'come', *cynīng* 'king', *cēne* 'bold', *bōc* 'book'; also finally after *æ*: *bæc* 'back'; and initially before consonants: *cnāwan* 'know'.

c had a sound like Mn.E. *ch* in *child* when it came before or between the front vowels *ī* and *ē*, except for the special cases mentioned above: *ċild* 'child', *ċēosan* 'choose', *miċel* 'great'; also finally after *ī*, *ē*, *æ*: *liċ* 'body', *bēċ* 'books', *spræċ* 'speech'; and in some words after *n*, *l*: *penċan* 'think', *æliċ* 'each'.

sc usually had the sound of Mn.E. *sh*: *scip* 'ship', *fisc* 'fish'. This sound was often written *sce*: *sc(e)olde* 'should', *bisc(e)op* 'bishop'. But *sc* had the sound of *sk* in some words where back vowels prevailed: *āscian* 'ask' (pret. *āscode*), and in foreign words such as *scōl* 'school', *Scottas* 'Scots (Irish)'.

g had the sound of *g* in *go* initially before back vowels and *y*; in the group *ng*; before consonants; and when doubled: *gān* 'go', *god* 'god', *gylden* 'golden'; *lang* 'long', *springan* 'spring'; *glæd* 'glad'; *frogga* 'frog'.

g was sounded as in German *sagen* (like *ch* in *loch*, but with voice) medially between back vowels, and between *l*, *r* and back vowels; and finally after back vowels directly or in consonant groups: *dagas* 'days', *boga* 'bow', *hālga* 'saint', *beorgan* 'save'; *ġe-nōg* 'enough', *burg* 'city'.

g had a sound like Mn.E. *y* in *yet* initially and medially before *ī*, *ē*: *ġē* 'you', *ġiefan* 'give', *peġen* 'servant'; also finally, in word or syllable, after these vowels and *æ*: *hālġ* 'holy', *weg* 'way', *dæg* 'day', *sægde* 'said'; and in some words after *r*, *l*: *byrġan* 'bury', *fylġan* 'follow'.

After *n* it sometimes had a sound like Mn.E. *dge* in *edge*: *sprengan* 'scatter'. *cg* represents this sound lengthened: *ecg* 'edge', *secgan* 'say'.

STRESS

4. The stress usually fell on the first syllable of a word. But when the first syllable was a prefix, usage varied: nouns and adjectives stressed the prefix, verbs the first syllable of the uncompounded word. The prefixes *ġe-* and *be-* were never stressed, *for-* rarely. In this book the stress is marked, when it is not on the first syllable, by (·) preceding the stressed syllable: *andswaru* 'answer', *andweard* 'present', but *ġe·lēafa* 'belief', *for·ġiefan* 'grant', *tō·berstan* 'burst'.

SOUND-CHANGES

5. In O.E. neighbouring sounds influenced each other to an extent unknown in Mn.E. Certain sounds modified others in prehistoric O.E., and then were themselves lost; so that the change is visible, but not the cause of it. Some sound-changes had important effects on O.E. accidence, so that a knowledge of them is necessary for an understanding of the grammar. The essentials only are set out here.

VOWELS

6. (1) Before *m* and *n* (the 'nasal' consonants), *i* appears instead of *e*, *a* instead of *æ*, *u* instead of *o*. So *bindan* 'bind', pret. sing. *band*, past part. *bunden*, contrasted with *brēġdan* 'pull', *bræġd*, *broġden*, of the same class of strong verbs.

(2) O.E. *æ*, which descends from older *a*, reverts to *a* before a single consonant followed by a back vowel: *dæg* 'day', gen. sing. *dæġes*, but nom. acc. pl. *dagas*, dat. pl. *dagum*.

(3) **Breaking.** The front vowels *æ*, *e* become respectively the diphthongs *ea*, *eo* before *h*, or the groups *h*, *r*, *l*+consonant. So *feohtan* 'fight', *weorpan* 'become', contrasted with *brēġdan* of the same conjugation. But *æ* is affected more than *e*, which is not changed by *l*+consonant. So *helpan* 'help' in infin., but in pret. sing., where *æ* would be normal (as *bræġd*), *healp*, *feahht*, *wearp* all have *ea*. This change is called 'breaking'.

(4) The front vowels *ǣ*, *ĕ* become respectively the diphthongs *ĕa*, *ĕe* after initial *c*, *ġ*, *sc*. So *ġiefan* 'give', pret. sing. *ġeaf*, pl. *ġēaƿon*, contrasted with *sprecan* 'speak', *spræc*, *spræcon*. (The pronoun *ġē* 'you' is not affected.)

(5) **i-mutation.** The back vowels, the diphthongs *ĕa* and *ĕo*, and the front vowels *ǣ* and *ĕ* were modified by the vowel *ī*, or the related consonant (the sound of *y* in Mn.E. *yet*, represented in German and other languages, and in the International Phonetic Alphabet, by *j*) in the following syllable. This gave rise to the following alternations between the unchanged vowels (or their descendants) and their 'mutated' variants in

positions in which *ij* formerly followed. (The *ij* was mostly lost before surviving records were written down.)

	a:æ as in <i>færþ</i> , 3 <i>sing. pres. indic. of faran</i> 'go'		
a+m, n:e	„ stent,	„ „	standan 'stand'
ā:æ	„ hǣtt,	„ „	hātan 'call'
o:e	„ dehter, <i>dat. sing. of dohtor</i>		'daughter'
ō:ē	„ grēwþ, 3 <i>sing. pres. indic. of grōwan</i>		'grow'
u:y	„ byriġ, <i>dat. sing., nom. acc. pl. of burg</i>		'city'
ū:ȳ	„ lȳþ, 3 <i>sing. pres. indic. of lūcan</i>		'lock'
æ:e	„ settan 'set' compared with sæt		'sat'
e:i	„ cwipþ, 3 <i>sing. pres. indic. of cweþan</i>		'say'
ea:ie	„ hielt,	„ „	healdan 'hold'
ēa:īe	„ hīewþ,	„ „	hēawan 'hew'
eo:ie	„ fieht,	„ „	feohtan 'fight'
ēo:īe	„ cīest	„ „	cēosan 'choose'

Most of these examples are drawn from verbal conjugation, in which this change plays an especially important part; but it affects also the declension of certain nouns, the comparison of certain adjectives and adverbs, and a great many aspects of derivation.¹ The same relation lies behind the alternation of *o* and *y* in associated forms like *gold* 'gold', *gylden* 'golden'; but here it is indirect, for the *y* is the mutation of *u* which was the original vowel in the word. This, the most important of all the O.E. sound-changes, is called 'i-mutation' or 'front mutation'.

(6) Some vowels in unstressed syllables were lost or preserved according to the length of the preceding syllable. A 'long' syllable is one which contains *either* a long vowel, *or* a short vowel followed by two consonants: *hūs* 'house', *folc* 'people', *cynn* 'race'.

(a) In a word of three syllables, of which the first is long and

¹ Examples are: *wand* 'wound' (pret. of *windan*): *wendan* 'turn'; *hāl* 'whole': *hǣlan* 'heal'; *fōda* 'food': *fēdan* 'feed'; *trum* 'strong': *trymman* 'strengthen'; *fūl* 'foul': *āfȳlan* 'defile'; *læġ* 'lay' (pret. of *licgan*): *leggan* 'lay'; *cweþan* 'say': *cwide* 'speech'; *eald* 'old': *ieldra* 'older'; *tēam* 'progeny': *tīeman* 'teem'; *heord* 'herd': *hierde* 'herdsman'; *ġe-strēon* 'possession': *ġe-strīenan* 'gain'.

the second contains a short vowel followed by a single consonant, the vowel of the second syllable is generally lost. This affects mainly the declension of nouns with two syllables in the nominative, which would become trisyllabic by the addition of inflexional endings: *engel* 'angel', but gen. sing. *engles*, nom. acc. pl. *englas*; *hēafod* 'head', gen. sing. *hēafdes*.

(b) After a long monosyllable final *u* is lost: *scip* 'ship', nom. acc. pl. *scipu*, but *hūs* 'house', pl. *hūs*.

(7) **Gradation.** Certain vowels are associated with others in fixed series, as in Mn.E. series like *drive*, *drove*, *driven* or *ring*, *rang*, *rung*. In O.E., as in Mn.E., these series appear most clearly in the 'strong' verbs, where they are more numerous and more complex than their modern descendants (for examples see §§ 62–67); but they run through the whole language, and are most important in the study of etymology.¹ This phenomenon is called 'gradation'. Its origin lies far back in prehistoric times, and is not fully understood; it is thought to depend ultimately on variation of accent.

CONSONANTS

7. (1) Between vowels, and between *l*, *r* and a vowel, *h* is lost. The vowels which thus fall together contract into a long diphthong; and the vowel preceding the *l* or *r*, if short, is lengthened: *feoh* 'money', gen. sing. *fēos*; *Wealh* 'Welshman', nom. acc. pl. *Wēalas*; *feorh* 'life', gen. sing. *fēores*.

(2) In oblique cases of some words *w*, following a consonant, comes before an inflexional ending beginning with a vowel. In the uninflected forms of such words *w* is replaced by *-u*, and before an inflexional ending beginning with a consonant, by *o*: *gearw-es* gen. sing. of *gearu* 'ready', acc. sing. masc. *gearo-ne*, gen. sing. fem. *gearo-re*.

(3) Certain pairs of consonants alternate, especially in the

¹ Examples are: *be-līfan* 'remain': *lāf* 'remnant'; *writan* 'write': *ġe-writ* 'writing' (cf. § 62); *cēosan* 'choose', pret. pl. *curon*, to which is related by mutation *cýre* 'choice'; *būgan* 'bend': *boga* 'bow' (cf. § 63); *faran* 'go': *fōr* 'journey' (cf. § 67).

conjugation of strong verbs. The pairs are *s:r*, *þ:d*, *h:g*, occasionally *h:w*. The first member of each pair appears in infin., pres., and pret. sing.; the second member in pret. pl. and past part.: *céosan*, pret. sing. *céas*: pret. pl. *curon*, past part. *coren*; *cweþan*, *cwæþ*: *cwædon*, *cweden*; *tēah* 'drew', pl. *tugon*; *seah* 'saw', pl. *sāwon*. The same variation extends to formations outside the verbal system: *cwide* 'speech', related to *cweþan*; *hryre* 'fall' to *hrēosan* (cf. § 6 (7)). It depends on variation of stress at an early stage of the language.

For modifications of consonants before verbal endings see § 57.

INFLEXIONS

NOUNS

8. Nouns are grouped according to their inflexions. Those which use predominantly the ending *n*, such as *nama* 'name', acc. gen. dat. sing., nom. acc. pl. *naman*, are commonly called 'weak'.¹ The others, such as *dæg* 'day' (masc.), gen. sing. *dægēs*, nom. acc. pl. *dagas*, or *giefu* 'gift' (fem.), acc. gen. dat. sing. *giefe*, nom. acc. pl. *giefu*, are mostly 'strong'; but there are a few minor groups.

9. There are three genders, masculine, feminine, and neuter. The gender of some nouns agrees with the sex of the persons they denote, as *se mann* 'the man', *sēo dohtor* 'the daughter'. This may be called 'natural gender'. But nouns denoting inanimate objects may have masculine or feminine, as well as neuter, 'grammatical gender', as *se stān* 'the stone' (masc.), *sēo duru* 'the door' (fem.); and some nouns denoting living beings are neuter, as *þæt wif* 'the woman'.

Grammatical gender is known only by the gender of the

¹ When used of nouns and adjectives, 'weak' is applied to the declensions in which earlier formal distinctions of case have been weakened by the loss of endings, so that the common suffix *-n* must fulfil several different functions. When used of verbs (§ 52) it is applied to those which form their past tense by the aid of a suffix, instead of by internal change of root-vowel.

article and other words connected with the noun, and, to some extent, by its form. All nouns ending in *-a* are masculine, as *se mōna* 'the moon'. (*Sēo sunne* 'the sun' is fem.) Those ending in *-dōm*, *-hād*, *-scipe* are also masculine: *se wīsdōm* 'wisdom', *se cildhād* 'childhood', *se frēondscipe* 'friendship'. Those ending in *-nes*, *-þu*, *-u/-o* (from adjectives, § 20), *-ræden*, *-ung* are feminine: *sēo rihtwīsnēs* 'righteousness', *sēo strengþu* 'strength', *sēo bieldu* 'boldness' (from *beald*), *sēo mann-ræden* 'allegiance', *sēo scotung* 'shooting'.

Compounds follow the gender of their last element, as *þæt burg-geat* 'the city-gate', from *sēo burg* and *þæt geat*. Hence *se wīf-mann* 'the woman' is masculine.

10. There are four case forms in nouns, nominative, accusative, genitive, and dative. Adjectives and some pronouns have in addition distinct forms for an instrumental, but in nouns the function of this case is performed by the dative. In form, certain cases are identical: the accusative is the same as the nominative in all plurals, and in the singular of all neuters and all strong masculines. Masculine and neuter nouns differ in the plural only in nominative and accusative, and in the singular only in the accusative of weak nouns, which in neuters is the same as the nominative. The genitive plural of nearly all nouns ends in *-a* (sometimes preceded by *-en-*), the dative plural in *-um*.

Weak or *-n* Declension

11. This declension contains nouns of all three genders; but neuters are very few, virtually only *ēage* 'eye' and *ēare* 'ear'. The nominative masculine ends in *-a*, as *nama* 'name', feminine and neuter in *-e*, as *sunne* 'sun', *ēage* 'eye':

<i>Masc.</i>		<i>Fem.</i>	
<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Pl.</i>	<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Pl.</i>
<i>N.</i> nam-a	nam-an	sunne-e	sunne-an
<i>A.</i> nam-an	nam-an	sunne-an	sunne-an
<i>G.</i> nam-an	nam-ena	sunne-an	sunne-ena
<i>D.</i> nam-an	nam-um	sunne-an	sunne-um

*Neut.**Sing.**Pl.*

N.A. ēag-e

ēag-an

G. ēag-an

ēag-ena

D. ēag-an

ēag-um

Nouns of this declension, especially masculines, are very numerous. All nouns in *-a* are declined like *nama*, e.g. *cnapa* 'boy', *ge-fēra* 'companion', *flota* 'fleet', *fōda* 'food', *guma* 'man', *ge-lēafa* 'belief', *mōna* 'moon', *mūpa* 'mouth of river', *oxa* 'ox', *ge-rēfa* 'reeve', *steorra* 'star', *swēora* 'neck', *tēona* 'injury', *tīma* 'time', *pēowa* 'servant', *wita* 'councillor', *ge-wuna* 'habit', *wyrhta* 'worker'. *Ieldran* 'ancestors' occurs in pl. only.

Feminines like *sunne* are: *ċirīce* 'church', *eorpe* 'earth', *fāmnne* 'virgin', *heorte* 'heart', *hlāfdige* 'lady', *mæsse* 'mass', *nædre* 'snake', *tunge* 'tongue', *wīse* 'manner'.

A few nouns of this declension ending in a long vowel or diphthong contract, and in effect add only the consonants of the case-endings, not the vowels: *ge-fēa* (m.) 'joy', *ge-fēan*; *lēo* (m. or f.) 'lion(ess)', *lēon*; *twēo* (m.) 'doubt', *twēon*.

Strong Declensions

12. There is a marked difference of inflexion between masculine and neuter on the one hand, feminine on the other (§ 10).

Masculine

13. (a) Most masculines of this declension end in a consonant, as *stān* 'stone', *engel* 'angel':

	<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Pl.</i>	<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Pl.</i>
N.A.	stān	stān-as	engel	engl-as
G.	stān-es	stān-a	engl-es	engl-a
D.	stān-e	stān-um	engl-e	engl-um

Like *stān* are: *āp* 'oath', *beorg* 'hill', *cniht* 'youth', *dāel* 'part', *dōm* 'judgement', *eard* 'country', *eorl* 'nobleman', *fisc* 'fish', *gāst* 'spirit', *geard* 'enclosure', *hām* 'home', *hlāf* 'loaf', *māþm* 'treasure', *prēost* 'priest', *rāp* 'rope', *tūn* 'enclosure', *pēow* 'servant', *weg* 'way', *wer* 'man'; also *cynīng* 'king', *hlāford*

'lord', *wīsdōm* 'wisdom', and other disyllables with a long second syllable.

Like *engel* (§ 6 (6a)) are: *dryhten* 'lord', *ealdor* 'prince', *ēpel* 'native land', and a few with short first syllable: *fugol* 'bird', *nægel* 'nail', *þegen* 'servant'.

Dæg 'day' changes its vowel in the plural (§ 6 (2)): *dægēs*, *dæge*; *dagas*, *daga*, *dagum*. So also *hwæl* 'whale', *stæf* 'staff'.

Wealh 'Welshman' drops *h* in inflexion and lengthens the diphthong (§ 7 (1)): *Wēales*, *Wēalas*, &c. So also *feorh* 'life' (both masc. and neut.), *fēores*, &c.

A few nouns which mainly follow this declension often have -*a* instead of -*e* in dat. sing. The most important are: *feld* 'field', *ford* 'ford', *weald* 'forest', *sumor* 'summer', *winter* 'winter'.

Mōnath 'month' has nom. acc. plural unchanged.

(b) Some end in -*e*, as *ende* 'end'. The -*e* drops before the case-endings: *ende*, *endes*, *ende*; *endas*, *enda*, *endum*. So also *hierde* 'herdsman', and agent nouns in -*ere* like *fiscere* 'fisherman'.

(c) Many nouns in -*e*^o have a short first syllable: *cwide* 'speech', *cyre* 'choice', *ege* 'fear', *hete* 'hatred', *hryre* 'fall', *lyre* 'loss', *mete* 'food' (pl. *mettas*), *sige* 'victory', *slege* 'killing', *stede* 'place', *wine* 'friend', and abstracts in -*scipe*, as *frēondscipe* 'friendship'.

Here 'army' often has -(i)ġ(e)- before case-endings: *her(i)ġes*, *her(i)ġe*; *her(i)ġ(e)as*, *her(i)ġ(e)a*, *her(i)ġum*; but *heres*, *heras*, &c., also occur.

Plurals in -e

14. Several nouns have nom. acc. pl. in -*e* instead of -*as*. These are mostly names of peoples: *Dene* 'Danes', *Engle* 'English', *Mierce* 'Mercians', *Norþ(an)hymbre* 'Northumbrians', *Seaxe* 'Saxons', and compounds of -*ware*, -*sāte* 'dwellers', as *Cantware* 'men of Kent', *Sumorsāte* 'men of Somerset'; but there are a few common nouns occurring only in plural: *ielde* 'men', *lēode* 'people'. *Wine* sometimes has plural in -*e*, as well as -*as*; so also, less often, *stede*, *cwide*.

Seaxe, *Mierċe* have gen. pl. *Seaxna*, *Mierċna*. *Dene*, *wine* have alternative gen. pl. *Denig(e)a*, *winig(e)a*.

Neuter

15. Most end in a consonant, as *scip* 'ship', *hūs* 'house':

	<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Pl.</i>	<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Pl.</i>
<i>NA.</i>	<i>scip</i>	<i>scip-u</i>	<i>hūs</i>	<i>hūs</i>
<i>G.</i>	<i>scip-es</i>	<i>scip-a</i>	<i>hūs-es</i>	<i>hūs-a</i>
<i>D.</i>	<i>scip-e</i>	<i>scip-um</i>	<i>hūs-e</i>	<i>hūs-um</i>

Like *scip* are short monosyllables and their compounds: *god* ('heathen) god', *ġe-bed* 'prayer', *ġe-writ* 'writing'.

Disyllables with long first syllable generally lose the vowel of the second syllable in inflexion (§ 6 (6a)): *dēofol* 'devil', *dēofles*, *dēoflu*. So also *mynster* 'monastery', *wæpen* 'weapon', *wundor* 'wonder'. *Hēafod* 'head' has pl. *hēafodu* or *hēafdu*.

Those in *-et* and *-en* usually double the consonant: *bærnet*, 'burning', *bærnette*; *fæsten* 'stronghold', *fæstennum*.

Fæt 'vessel' changes its vowel in plural (§ 6 (2)): *fættes*, *fæte*; *fatu*, *fata*, *fatum*. So also *bæp* 'bath'. *Ġeat* 'gate' generally has pl. *gatu*, *gata*, *gatum*.

Feoh 'money' drops *h* in inflexion and lengthens the diphthong (§ 7 (1)): *fēos*, *fēo*.

Like *hūs* are nouns with long single or final syllable (§ 6 (6b)): *bān* 'bone', *bearn* 'child', *ċild* 'child' (see also § 26), *dēor* 'wild beast', *flōd* 'flood' (also masc.), *folc* 'people', *gold* 'gold', *ġear* 'year', *land* 'land', *līc* 'body', *mōd* 'mind', *ġe-mōt* 'meeting', *scēap* 'sheep', *þing* 'thing', *wīf* 'woman', *word* 'word'.

Disyllables with short first syllable keep the medial vowel in inflexion, and generally have no *-u* in nom. acc. pl.: *werod* 'troop', *werodes*, &c.; *wæter* 'water' has pl. *wæteru* beside *wæter*.

16. Some end in *-e*, as *rīce* 'kingdom', *wīte* 'punishment':

	<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Pl.</i>	<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Pl.</i>
<i>NA.</i>	<i>rīc-e</i>	<i>rīc-u</i> , <i>-iu</i>	<i>wīt-e</i>	<i>wīt-u</i>
<i>G.</i>	<i>rīc-es</i>	<i>rīc-a</i>	<i>wīt-es</i>	<i>wīt-a</i>
<i>D.</i>	<i>rīc-e</i>	<i>rīc-um</i>	<i>wīt-e</i>	<i>wīt-um</i>

Like *rīce* is *styċce* 'piece'.

Like *wīte* are *ǣrende* 'message', *ge·pēode* 'language'.

With short first syllable is *spere* 'spear'.

Feminine

17. Feminines with short root syllable end in *-u* in nom. sing., those with long root syllable have no ending (§ 6 (6b)); so *ġiefu* 'gift', *lār* 'teaching':

	<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Pl.</i>		<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Pl.</i>
<i>N.</i>	ġief-u	ġief-a, -e		lār	lār-a, -e
<i>A.</i>	ġief-e	ġief-a, -e		lār-e	lār-a, -e
<i>G.</i>	ġief-e	ġief-a, -ena		lār-e	lār-a, -ena
<i>D.</i>	ġief-e	ġief-um		lār-e	lār-um

Like *ġiefu* are: *andswaru* 'answer', *lufu* 'love', *scamu* 'shame', *talū* 'tale', *wicu* 'week'.

Like *lār* are: *ār* 'mercy', *feorm* 'food', *healf* 'half', *heall* 'hall', *lāf* 'remainder', *mearc* 'boundary', *rōd* 'cross', *scīr* 'shire', *sorg* 'sorrow', *spræc* 'speech', *stōw* 'place', *pēod* 'people', *wund* 'wound'.

Disyllabic words with long first syllable lose the medial vowel (§ 6 (6a)): *sāwol* 'soul', *sāwle*, &c.; also *ċeaster* 'city', *frōfor* 'comfort'.

Nouns in *-en* double the *n* in inflexion: *byrpen* 'burden', *byrpenne*; so those in *-ræden*, as *hierdræden* 'guardianship'.

Those in *-nes* similarly double the *s*: *gōdnes* 'goodness', *gōdnesse*, &c.

Mæd 'meadow' and *læs* 'pasture' add *w* before inflexional endings other than *-um*: *mædwe*, *læswe*; but *mædum*.

18. A considerable group of feminines has acc. sing. the same as nom., and *-e* regularly in nom. acc. pl. All these have long root syllables. Some of the most important are: *ǣht* 'property', *brȳd* 'bride', *cwēn* 'queen', *cyst* 'virtue', *dæd* 'deed', *fierd* 'army', *hæs* 'command', *lyft* 'air', *miht* 'power', *nīed* 'need', *tīd* 'time', *wēn* 'hope', *wynn* 'joy', *wyrd* 'fate', *wyrt* 'plant'.

Minor Declensions

19. -u Declension. This includes both masculine and feminine nouns. Most have short root syllables, and -u in nom. acc. sing. The few with long root syllables have no -u (§ 6 (6b)). Inflexion of masculine and feminine is identical; so *sunu* (m.) 'son', *hand* (f.) 'hand':

	<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Pl.</i>	<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Pl.</i>
<i>NA.</i>	sun-u	sun-a	hand	hand-a
<i>G.</i>	sun-a	sun-a	hand-a	hand-a
<i>D.</i>	sun-a	sun-um	hand-a	hand-um

Like *sunu* is the masc. *wudu* 'wood' and the fem. *duru* 'door'.

Like *hand* is the fem. *flōr* 'floor'.

20. Also with -u (-o) in nom. sing., but otherwise distinct, are two groups of feminine abstract nouns formed from adjectives: one with ending -þy, as *strengþu* 'strength', the other with ending -u (-o), as *bieldu*, *bieldo* 'boldness', *ieldu* 'age', *meniðu* 'multitude'. These often have -e in the oblique cases, like *giefu*; but they are often not declined at all in the singular, and the plural of such nouns, naturally, hardly ever occurs.

21. Three small but important groups form some of their cases by change of root-vowel, according to § 6 (5), instead of by adding endings:

22. (1) 'Mutation plurals', both masculine and feminine, as *fōt* (m.) 'foot', *burg* (f.) 'city':

	<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Pl.</i>	<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Pl.</i>
<i>NA.</i>	fōt	fēt	burg	byrið
<i>G.</i>	fōt-es	fōt-a	byrið, burg-e	burg-a
<i>D.</i>	fēt	fōt-um	byrið	burg-um

Like *fōt* are *mann* (*menn*), *tōþ* 'tooth' (*tēþ*).

Like *burg* are *bōc* 'book' (*bēc*), *gōs* 'goose' (*gēs*), *mūs* 'mouse' (*mȳs*). *Niht* 'night' belongs to this class, but generally has the same vowel throughout; it sometimes follows § 18.

23. (2) *-r* nouns, all denoting relationship: *fæder* 'father', *mōdor* 'mother', *dohtor* 'daughter', *brōþor* 'brother', *sweostor* 'sister'. The gender is natural:

	<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Pl.</i>	<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Pl.</i>
<i>N.A.</i>	<i>brōþor</i>	<i>brōþor</i> , <i>brōþr-u</i>	<i>fæder</i>	<i>fæder-as</i>
<i>G.</i>	<i>brōþor</i>	<i>brōþr-a</i>	<i>fæder</i> , <i>fæder-es</i>	<i>fæder-a</i>
<i>D.</i>	<i>brēþer</i>	<i>brōbr-um</i>	<i>fæder</i>	<i>fæder-um</i>

Like *brōþor* is *mōdor*, which sometimes has *mēder* in gen. as well as dat. sing. *Dohtor* has dat. sing. *dehter*, nom. acc. pl. *dohtor*, *-tru*. *Sweostor* is unchanged throughout sing. and nom. acc. pl. Only *fæder* has adopted the ordinary strong pl. endings.

24. (3) *-nd* nouns, formed from the present participle of verbs: only *frēond* 'friend', *fēond* 'enemy' (both masc.):

	<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Pl.</i>
<i>N.A.</i>	<i>frēond</i>	<i>frīend</i> , <i>frēond-as</i>
<i>G.</i>	<i>frēond-es</i>	<i>frēond-a</i>
<i>D.</i>	<i>frīend</i> , <i>frēond-e</i>	<i>frēond-um</i>

25. Other nouns from participles, in *-end*, have the adjectival gen. pl. ending *-ra*. They are mostly masculine. So *būend* 'dweller':

	<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Pl.</i>
<i>N.A.</i>	<i>būend</i>	<i>būend</i> , <i>būend-e</i> , <i>būend-as</i>
<i>G.</i>	<i>būend-es</i>	<i>būend-ra</i>
<i>D.</i>	<i>būend-e</i>	<i>būend-um</i>

So also *hælend* 'Saviour', *wealdend* 'ruler'.

26. A few neuters have *-r-* before the plural endings: *lamb* 'lamb' is like *land* in sing. (§ 15), but has pl. *lamb-ru*, *lamb-ra*, *lamb-rum*. So also *æg* 'egg'. *Cild* 'child' sometimes has these endings.

Proper names

27. Native names of persons are declined like other nouns—*Ælf-red*, g. *Ælfred-es*, d. *Ælfred-e*; *Ead-burg* (fem.),

g. *Eadburg-e*, &c. Foreign personal names sometimes follow the analogy of native names: *Crīst*, *Salomon* have g. *Crīst-es*, *Salomon-es*, d. *Crīst-e*, *Salomon-e*. Sometimes they are declined as in Latin, especially those in *-us*; but often with a mixture of English endings, and with the Latin endings used somewhat loosely, the accusative ending serving for the dative as well: *Cȳrus*, g. *Cȳres*, a. *Cȳrum*, d. *Cȳrum* (as *tō þæm cyninge Cȳrum*).

Many names of countries and districts are compounds, formed from the name of the inhabitants followed by *land*. The first element is commonly in the gen. pl., but ordinary compounds also occur: *Engla-land* 'land of the English, England', *Norþhymbra-land* 'Northumbria'; but *Scot-land*. The name of the inhabitants is very often used for the country itself: *on Ēast-englum* 'in East Anglia', lit. 'among the East Anglians'. Similarly *on Angel-cynne* 'in England', lit. 'among the English race' (but *Angelcynnes land* is also frequent), *Israhēla-þēod* 'Israel'. Many other such names are taken from Latin, as *Breten* 'Britain', *Cent* 'Kent', *Germānia* 'Germany'. Such names are sometimes left undeclined: *on Cent*, *tō Hierusalēm*. Those ending in *-a* take *-e* in the oblique cases: g. *Germānie*.

ADJECTIVES

28. Adjectives have strong and weak inflexions, but they differ from nouns in that every adjective (with very few exceptions) is capable of being declined *both* strong *and* weak. The use of one or the other form is a matter of syntax, depending on the relation of the adjective to neighbouring words (§ 89). Adjectives have three gender forms, and the same cases as nouns; and in addition, in masculine and neuter singular the strong declension has an *instrumental* case of distinct form. In feminine and plural, and in the weak declension, the dative serves the same purpose.

Strong Declension

29. Many endings (italicized in the paradigm) differ from

those of nouns. Masculine and neuter again stand together, and differ markedly from feminine. So

(a) *cwic* 'alive':

	<i>Sing.</i>		
	<i>Masc.</i>	<i>Neut.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>
<i>N.</i>	<i>cwic</i>	<i>cwic</i>	<i>cwic-u</i>
<i>A.</i>	<i>cwic-ne</i>	<i>cwic</i>	<i>cwic-e</i>
<i>G.</i>	<i>cwic-es</i>	<i>cwic-es</i>	<i>cwic-re</i>
<i>D.</i>	<i>cwic-um</i>	<i>cwic-um</i>	<i>cwic-re</i>
<i>I.</i>	<i>cwic-e</i>	<i>cwic-e</i>	(<i>cwic-re</i>)
	<i>Pl.</i>		
<i>NA.</i>	<i>cwic-e</i>	<i>cwic-u</i>	<i>cwic-a, -e</i>
	<i>all genders</i>		
<i>G.</i>		<i>cwic-ra</i>	
<i>D.</i>		<i>cwic-um</i>	

(b) *gōd* 'good' is similar except as follows (§ 6 (6b)):

<i>N. Sing.</i>	<i>gōd</i>	<i>gōd</i>	<i>gōd</i>
<i>NA. Pl.</i>	<i>gōd-e</i>	<i>gōd</i>	<i>gōd-a, -e</i>

In later texts all genders of the plural (of both types) commonly have the form of the masculine.

(a) Like *cwic* are adjectives with short root syllable: *tīl* 'good', *sum* 'some, a certain' (but nom. sing. fem. *sum* also occurs), and those with short final syllable, such as the numerous compounds ending in *-lic* and *-sum*: *fæ̃r-lic* 'sudden', *ge-hĩer-sum* 'obedient'.

Disyllabic adjectives with long first syllable generally lose the medial vowel before inflexional endings beginning with a vowel (§ 6 (6a)): *hālīg* 'holy', *hālġes*, *hālġum*, &c. So also, though with short first syllable, *micel* 'great', *miclu*, *micles*, *miclum*, &c., and often *yfel* 'bad', *yfles*, &c. The vowel is, of course, retained before endings beginning with a consonant: *hālġigne*, *micelre*, *yfelra*.

Disyllabic adjectives (and participles) with long first syllable sometimes have nom. sing. fem. without ending, as well as the

regular form in *-u*. Thus *hālig* may be masculine, feminine, or neuter.

Adjectives with *æ* in the root syllable, as *glæd* 'glad', *hwæt* 'vigorous', change it to *a* before all endings beginning with a vowel: *glades*, *gladum*, *glade*, but *glædne*, *glædre*, &c.

Those in *-e*, as *blīpe* 'joyful', drop it in all inflexions: *blīpne*, *blīpu*, *blīpre*, &c.

Those in *-u*, as *gearu* 'ready', change the *-u* to *-w-* before vowels, to *-o-* before consonants (§ 7 (2)): *gearwes*, *gearone*.

Those ending in a double consonant simplify it before consonants: *nytt* 'useful', *nytne*.

(b) Like *gōd* are adjectives with long root or final syllable: *hāl* 'whole', *eald* 'old', *siġe-fæst* 'victorious'.

Disyllables with short first syllable vary: *maniġ* 'many' has nom. sing. fem. and nom. acc. pl. neut. regularly *maniġ*, but also *manigu*.

Hēah 'high' drops its second *h* in inflexion and contracts: *hēas*, *hēam*, *hēare*, nom. pl. *hēa*, &c. The acc. sing. masc. is mostly *hēanne*.

Fēa 'few' has only plural inflexions: gen. *fēara*, dat. *fēam*. Regular forms *fēawe*, *fēawum* also occur.

Fela 'many' is indeclinable.

Weak Declension

30. The weak inflexions of adjectives are the same as those of nouns, except that the gen. pl. usually ends in *-ra*, as in the strong adjective.

	Sing.		Pl.	
	Masc.	Neut.	Fem.	All genders
N.	gōd-a	gōd-e	gōd-e	gōd-an
A.	gōd-an	gōd-e	gōd-an	gōd-an
G.	gōd-an	gōd-an	gōd-an	gōd-ra (-ena)
D.	gōd-an	gōd-an	gōd-an	gōd-um

The changes of vowel and consonant in particular words are as in the strong declension.

Comparison

31. The comparative is formed by adding *-ra*, and is always declined weak: *lēof* 'dear', comp. masc. *lēofra*, fem. *lēofre*, pl. *lēofran*, &c. Adjectives in *-e* drop it before the ending: *mære* 'famous', *mærra*.

The superlative is formed by adding *-ost*, and may be either weak or strong: *lēofost(a)*, *mærost(a)*.

32. A few adjectives have mutated vowels (§ 6 (5)) in comparative and superlative, and *-est* as the superlative ending (contracted to *-st* in one or two words). The most important are:

eald	'old'	ieldra	ieldest
geong	'young'	gingra	gingest
lang	'long'	lengra	lengest
strang	'strong'	strengra	strengest
hēah	'high'	hierra	hiēst

33. The following form comparative and superlative from roots different from those of the positive:

gōd	'good'	betera, betra	betst
		sēlra	sēlest
yfel	'bad'	wiersa	wier(re)st
miçel	'great'	māra	mæst
lýtcl	'little'	læssa	læst

34. The following have only comparative and superlative forms, the corresponding positives being adverbs:

(ærr	'formerly')	ærra	ærest
(feorr	'far')	fierra	fierrest
(fore	'before')		forma, fyrrest,
			fyr(e)st
(nēah	'near')	nēarra	nīehst
(ūte	'outside')	ūterra	ūt(e)mest
		ȳterra	ȳt(e)mest

COMPARISON OF ADVERBS

35. The regular comparative is formed by adding *-or*, the superlative by adding *-ost*, instead of the usual positive ending *-e*: *swīpe* 'greatly', *swīpor*, *swīpost*; *blīpelīcē* 'joyfully', *blīpelīcor*, *blīpelīcost*.

36. A few adverbs have mutated vowels in comparative and superlative, and *-est* as the superlative ending. These have no ending at all in the comparative: *lange* 'long', *leng*, *lengest*.

37. The following, like the corresponding adjectives, form comparative and superlative from roots different from those of the positive:

wel	'well'	bet	bet(e)st
yfle	'badly'	sēl	sēlest
micle	'much'	wiers	wier(re)st
lýt	'little'	mā	māest
		lā3	lāest

NUMERALS

38.	Cardinal	Ordinal
	ān 'one'	forma 'first'
	twā	ōper
	þrēo	þrida
	fēower	fēorþa
	fif	fifta
	siex	siexta
	seofon	seoforþa
	eahta	eahtorþa
	nigon	nigorþa
	tien	tēorþa
	en(d)leofon	en(d)leohta
	twelf	twelfta
	þrēo-tiene 'thirteen'	þrēo-tēorþa

and so on to

<i>Cardinal</i>		<i>Ordinal</i>
nigon-tiene	'nineteen'	nigon-tēoþa
twen-tiġ	'twenty'	twentigoþa
þri-tiġ	'thirty'	þritigoþa
fēower-tiġ	'forty'	fēowertigoþa
fif-tiġ	'fifty'	fiftigoþa
siex-tiġ	'sixty'	siextigoþa
hund-seofon-tiġ	'seventy'	
hund-eahta-tiġ	'eighty'	
hund-nigon-tiġ	'ninety'	
hund, hundred,		
hund-tēon-tiġ	'hundred'	
hund-endleofon-tiġ	'a hundred and ten'	
hund-twelf-tiġ	'a hundred and twenty'	
þūsend	'thousand'	

39. *Ān* is declined like other adjectives. Weak forms are generally used in the sense 'alone'.

<i>Twā:</i>	<i>Masc.</i>	<i>Neut.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>
<i>NA.</i>	twēgen	twā, tū	twā
		<i>all genders</i>	
<i>G.</i>		twēgra, twēg(e)a	
<i>D.</i>		twæm	

So also *bēgen* 'both': *bā, bēgra, bæm.*

<i>Prēo:</i>	<i>Masc.</i>	<i>Neut.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>
<i>NA.</i>	þrie	þrēo	þrēo
		<i>all genders</i>	
<i>G.</i>		þrēora	
<i>D.</i>		þrim	

40. The numerals from *fēower* to *nigontiene* are generally undeclined. When used without a noun they sometimes take the following endings: nom. *-e*; gen. *-a*; dat. *-um*: *fif-e, fif-a, fif-um*. Those in *-tiġ* are sometimes declined like neuter nouns,

sometimes like adjectives, but are often left undeclined. When not used as adjectives they govern the genitive. *Hund* and *pūsend* are either declined as neuter nouns or left undeclined, and always take the genitive: *eahta hund mīla* 'eight hundred miles', *fēower pūsend wera* 'four thousand men'.

In numbers made up of tens and units, the units always precede: *ān and twentiġ* 'twenty-one'.

41. Ordinals are always declined weak, except *ōper* which is always strong. 'A certain number and a half' is expressed by the ordinal of the number next above, with *healf*: *pridde healf* 'two and a half' ('two complete and the third a half'); *fēorpe healf hund* 'three hundred and fifty'.

PRONOUNS

Personal

42.

First Person

	<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Dual</i>	<i>Pl.</i>
N.	iċ	wit *	wē
A.	mē	unc	ūs
G.	mīn	uncer	ūre
D.	mē	unc	ūs

43.

Second Person

	<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Dual</i>	<i>Pl.</i>
N.	pū	ġit	ġē
A.	pē	inc	ēow
G.	pīn	incer	ēower
D.	pē	inc	ēow

44.

Third Person

	<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Pl.</i>
	<i>Masc.</i>	<i>All genders</i>
N.	hē	hīe
A.	hine	hīe
G.	his	hi(e)ra
D.	him	him

45. There are no special reflexive pronouns. The ordinary personal pronouns are used instead: *hīe ġe-samnodon hīe* 'they collected themselves, assembled'; *hīe ā-bædon him wīf* 'they asked for wives for themselves'. *Self* is used as an emphatic reflexive adjective. Sometimes it agrees with an associated pronoun: *swā swā hīe wyscton him selfum* 'as they wished for themselves'; but sometimes with the subject, the pronoun being in the dative ('of interest'): *God fore-scēawap him self pā offrunge* 'God himself will provide the offering (for himself)'.

Possessive

46. *Mīn, pīn, ūre, ēower*, and the duals *uncer* and *incer* are declined like other adjectives, but do not take weak forms. The genitives *his, hiere, hiera* are used as indeclinable possessives.

47. Demonstrative and Definite Article

	<i>Masc.</i>	<i>Sing.</i> <i>Neut.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>	<i>Pl.</i> <i>All genders</i>
<i>N.</i>	sē	þæt	sēo	þā
<i>A.</i>	þone	þæt	þā	þā
<i>G.</i>	þæs	þæs	þære	þāra
<i>D.</i>	þæm	þæm	þære	þæm
<i>I.</i>	þȳ	þȳ, þon	(þære)	

This pronoun is most commonly used as a definite article. It is sometimes used as a personal pronoun: *hē ġe-hīerþ mīn word, and pā wyrçþ* 'he hears my words, and does them'. *Sē* as a demonstrative and personal pronoun has its vowel long.

48. Demonstrative 'this'

	<i>Masc.</i>	<i>Sing.</i> <i>Neut.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>	<i>Pl.</i> <i>All genders</i>
<i>N.</i>	þes	þis	þeos	þās
<i>A.</i>	þisne	þis	þās	þās
<i>G.</i>	þisses	þisses	þisse	þissa
<i>D.</i>	þissum	þissum	þisse	þissum
<i>I.</i>	þȳs	þȳs	(þisse)	

49. Interrogative

	<i>Masc. and Fem.</i>	<i>Neut.</i>
N.	hwā	hwæt
A.	hwone	hwæt
G.	hwæs	hwæs
D.	hwæm	hwæm
I.		hwȳ, hwon

Hwelc 'which' is declined like a strong adjective. It is used both as a pronoun and as an adjective.

Relative

50. There is no separate relative pronoun. The commonest relative is the particle *þe*, which is indeclinable and serves for all genders and numbers: *ælc þara þe þās mīn word ge-hierþ* 'everyone who hears these words of mine'. It is often combined with *sē*, which is declined: *sē þe* 'who' masc., *sēo þe* fem., &c. *Sē* alone is also used as a relative: *hīe þā hine ā-wurpon intō ānum sēaþe, on þām wæron seofon lēon* 'they then threw him into a pit, in which were seven lions'. It sometimes has the sense of 'he who', 'that which': *hēr þū hæfst þæt þīn is* 'here thou hast that which is thine'.

Indefinite

51. The interrogatives *hwā*, *hwelc*, &c., are used also in the sense of 'any(one), any(thing)'. They are combined with *swā* to mean 'whoever, whatever': *swā hwā swā, swā hwæt swā, swā hwelc swā*. *Ān* and *sum* are sometimes used indefinitely: *ān mann, sum mann* 'a certain man', hence simply 'a man'. But the indefinite article is more often not expressed. See further § 90.

Man, a form of *mann*, is often used in the indefinite sense of 'one' (French *on*, German *man*): *his brōþor Horsan man of-slōg* 'they killed his brother Horsa', 'his brother H. was killed'.

Ælc 'each', *ænig* 'any', *nænig* 'no, none' are declined like adjectives. They are used both as pronouns and as adjectives.

The addition of the prefix *ge-* changes the sense of some indefinites from 'any' to 'every': *hwā* 'anyone', *ge·hwā* 'everyone'. A frequent idiom, is *ānra ge·hwelc* 'everyone'.

VERBS

52. There are two main classes of verbs, called 'strong' and 'weak'. The difference between them lies principally in the formation of the preterite tense. That of strong verbs is made by changing the vowel of the root syllable according to fixed series ('vowel-gradation', § 6 (7)); that of weak verbs by adding to the root syllable a suffix containing *d* (*-ede*, *-ode*, *-de*), sometimes changed to *t* by assimilation to the preceding consonant.

53. Only two tenses are distinguished in form, present and preterite. There is no formal passive, except in the one form, surviving from an older stage of the language, *hätte* from *hātan* 'call, name', which is both present ('is called') and preterite ('was called'): *se munuc hätte Abbo* 'the monk's name was Abbo'. Persons are distinguished only in the singular of the present and preterite indicative.

54. The present and past participles may be declined like adjectives. The past participle generally prefixes *ge-*, as in *ge·bunden* 'bound', *ge·numen* 'taken', unless the other parts of the verb have the prefix already: *ge·hieran* 'hear', *ge·hīered*. No *ge-* is added if the verb has another prefix, such as *ā-*, *be-*, *for-*: *for·giefan* 'grant', *for·giefen*.

Strong

55. The following is the complete conjugation of a typical strong verb, *bindan* 'bind':

	<i>Indicative</i>	<i>Subjunctive</i>
<i>Pres. sing.</i> 1.	bind-e	bind-e
2.	bind-est, bintst	bind-e
3.	bind-eþ, bint	bind-e
<i>pl.</i>	bind-aþ	bind-en

	<i>Indicative</i>	<i>Subjunctive</i>
<i>Pret. sing.</i> 1.	band	bund-e
2.	bund-e	bund-e
3.	band	bund-e
<i>pl.</i>	bund-on	bund-en

Imperative sing. bind; *pl.* bind-aþ. *Infinitive* bind-an; *inflected infin.* tō bind-enne. *Participle pres.* bind-ende; *past* ġe·bunden.

56. When a pronoun subject immediately follows the verb, the endings *-on*, *-en*, and *-aþ* of 1 and 2 persons *pl. pret. indic.*, *pres.* and *pret. subj.*, and *pres. indic.* and *imper.*, are often replaced by *-e*: *wē bindaþ* 'we bind', but *binde wē* 'let us bind', 'do we bind?'; *gāþ!* 'go!', but *gā ġē!* 'go ye!'

57. The full endings of 2 and 3 *sing. pres. indic.* are *-est* and *-eþ*. These are generally contracted ('syncopated'), and the consonants which thus fall together change as follows:

-test, -teþ	become	-tst, -tt:	lætst, lætt	from	lætan	'let'
-dest, -deþ	,,	-tst, -tt:	bītst, bītt	,,	bīdan	'wait'
-ddest, -ddeþ	,,	-tst, -tt:	bitst, bitt	,,	biddan	'pray'
-þest, -þeþ	,,	-(þ)st, -þþ:	cwi(þ)st, cwipþ	from		
					cweþan	'say'
-sest, -seþ	,,	-st, -st:	ċiest, ċiest	from	ċēosan	
						'choose'
-ndest, -ndeþ	,,	-ntst, -nt:	bintst, bint	,,	bindan	
						'bind'

g often becomes *h*, as *fliehþ* from *flēogan* 'fly'.

Double consonants become single before the endings, as *fielst*, *fielþ* from *feallan* 'fall'.

Double final consonants are often simplified: *læt*, *būt*, *cwip*.

58. When the 2 and 3 *sing.* are contracted in this way the root vowel is mutated, according to the series set out in § 6 (5). (The vowels *ī*, *æ*, *ē* are not subject to mutation.)

59. In the *pret. indic.* the *pl.* generally has a different vowel from the *sing.*: *ic band*, but *wē bundon*. The 2 *sing. pret. indic.*

and the whole of the pret. subj. have the vowel of the pret. plural indic.: *þū bunde, wē bunden*.

60. Some 'contracted' verbs, such as *sēon* 'see', have *h* in certain forms, but have lost it in those parts in which it came between two vowels (§ 7 (1)): *ic sēo, wē sēoþ, tō sēonne*. It remains in 2 and 3 sing. pres. indic.: *si(e)hst, si(e)hþ*; imper. sing.: *seoh*; pret. sing.: *seah*.

61. There are seven conjugations or 'classes' of strong verbs, distinguished mainly by the different formation of their preterites. A few verbs, though having a strong preterite, form their present according to the first weak class (§ 70).

The following lists include all the strong verbs that occur in the texts in this book, together with several others of the commoner ones. They give the four 'principal parts', which enable the conjugation to be completed, and also the 3 sing. pres. indic.

Class I—'Drive' conjugation

62. Vowel series: pres. *ī*, pret. sing. *ā*, pl. *i*, past part. *i*.

<i>Infin.</i>	<i>3 pres.</i>	<i>Pret. sing.</i>	<i>Pret. pl.</i>	<i>Past part.</i>
<i>bīdan</i> 'wait'	<i>bītt</i>	<i>bād</i>	<i>bidon</i>	<i>biden</i>
<i>bītan</i> 'bite'	<i>bītt</i>	<i>bāt</i>	<i>biton</i>	<i>biten</i>
<i>drīfan</i> 'drive'	<i>drifþ</i>	<i>drāf</i>	<i>drifon</i>	<i>drifen</i>
<i>hrīnan</i> 'touch'	<i>hrīnþ</i>	<i>hrān</i>	<i>hrinon</i>	<i>hrinen</i>
<i>mīþan</i> 'hide'	<i>mīþþ</i>	<i>māþ</i>	<i>miþon</i>	<i>miþen</i>
<i>rīpan</i> 'reap'	<i>rīþþ</i>	<i>rāþ</i>	<i>ripon</i>	<i>ripen</i>
<i>(ā)rīsan</i> 'rise'	<i>-rīst</i>	<i>-rās</i>	<i>-rison</i>	<i>-risen</i>
<i>snīþan</i> 'cut'	<i>snīþþ</i>	<i>snāþ</i>	<i>snidon</i>	<i>sniden</i>
<i>stīgan</i> 'ascend'	<i>stīgþ</i>	<i>stāg</i>	<i>stigon</i>	<i>stigen</i>
<i>(be)swīcan</i> 'deceive'	<i>-swīcþ</i>	<i>-swāc</i>	<i>-swicon</i>	<i>-swicen</i>

Like *bīdan* are *gnīdan* 'rub', *rīdan* 'ride'.

Like *bītan* are *slītan* 'tear', *ge-wītan* 'depart', *writan* 'write'.

Like *drīfan* is *(be)līfan* 'remain'.

Like *hrīnan* is *scīnan* 'shine'.

Like *-swīcan* is *snīcan* 'creep'.

Infin. 3 *pres.* *Pret. sing.* *Pret. pl.* *Past part.*

Contracted:

þēon 'prosper' þiehþ þāh ' þigon þigen

Class II—'Choose' conjugation

63. Vowel series: *pres.* ēo and ū, *pret. sing.* ēa, *pl. u*, *past part. o*.

bēodan 'offer'	bīett	bēad.	budon	boden
brēotan 'break'	brīett	brēat	bruton	broten
ċēosan 'choose'	ċiest	ċēas	curon	coren
flēogan 'fly'	fliehþ	flēag	flugon	flogen
hrēowan 'rue'	hrīewþ	hrēaw	hruwon	hrowen
sēoþan 'boil'	sīeþþ	sēaþ	sudon	soden
smēocan 'smoke'	smīecþ	smēac	smucon	smocen

Like *brēotan* are *flēotan* 'float', *scēotan* 'shoot'.

Like *ċēosan* are *hrēosan* 'fall', (*for*) *lēosan* 'lose'.

ū-presents:

brūcan 'enjoy'	brȳcþ	bręac	brucon	brocen
būgan 'bow'	bȳhþ	bęag	bugon	bogen
lūtan 'bow'	lȳtt	lęat	luton	loten
scūfan 'push'	scȳfþ	scęaf	scufon	scofen

Like *brūcan* is *lūcan* 'lock'.

Contracted:

flēon 'flee'	fliehþ	flēah	flugon	flogen
tēon 'draw'	tiehþ	tēah	tugon	togen

Class III—'Bind' conjugation

64. The vowel of the infinitive is followed by two consonants, of which the first is nearly always a nasal (*m*, *n*) or a liquid (*l*, *r*). The vowel series depends on this consonant (§ 6 (1, 3)).

(a) before nasal+cons., *pres. i*, *pret. sing. a*, *pl. u*, *past part. u*.

bindan 'bind'	bint	band	bundon	bunden
drincan 'drink'	drincþ	dranc	druncon	druncen

<i>Infin.</i>	<i>3 pres.</i>	<i>Pret. sing.</i>	<i>Pret. pl.</i>	<i>Past part.</i>
findan 'find'	fint	funde, fand	fundon	funden
(on)ginnan 'begin'	-ginþ	-gann	-gunnon	-gunnen
ge·limpan 'happen'	-limpþ	-lamp	-lumpon	-lumpen
springan 'spring'	springþ	sprang	sprungon	sprungen
swimman 'swim'	swimpþ	swamm	swummon	swummen
winnan 'fight'	wiþþ	wann	wunnon	wunnen

Like *bindan* are *grindan* 'grind', *windan* 'wind'.

Like *drincan* are *scrincan* 'shrink', *swincan* 'toil'.

Like *springan* are *swingan* 'beat', *wringan* 'wring'.

(b) before *l*+cons., pres. *e* (*ie*, § 6 (4)), pret. sing. *ea*, pl. *u*, past part. *o*.

delfan 'dig'	dilfþ	dealf	dulfon	dolfen
gieldan 'pay'	gielt	geald	guldon	golden
helpan 'help'	hilpþ	healp	hulpon	holpen
sweltan 'die'	swilt	swealt	swulton	swolten

(c) before *r*+cons. (also *h*+cons.), pres. *eo*, pret. sing. *ea*, pl. *u*, past part. *o*.

beorgan 'protect'	bierhþ	bearg	burgon	borgen
ceorfan 'cut'	cierfþ	cearf	curfon	corfen
feohtan 'fight'	fieht	feaht	fuhton	fohten
weorpan 'throw'	wierpþ	wearp	wurpon	worpen
weorþan 'become'	wierþ	wearþ	wurdon	worden

Two verbs of this form have the vowel series of (a), to which they belonged before metathesis of *r*:

bi(e)rnan 'burn'	bi(e)rnþ	barn	burnon	burnen
i(e)rnan 'run'	i(e)rnþ	arn	urnon	urnen

Exceptional are:

berstan 'burst'	bi(e)rst	bærst	burston	borsten
bregdan 'pull'	[britt] ¹	brægd	brugdon	brogden
frignan 'ask'	[frīnþ]	frægn	frugnon	frugnen
murnan 'mourn'	myrnþ	mearn	murnon	

¹ [] indicates that no regular forms are recorded.

Class IV—'Bear' conjugation

65. The vowel of the infinitive is followed by a single consonant, nearly always a liquid or nasal: in *brecan* the liquid precedes.

Vowel series: pres. *e* (*i* before *m*), pret. sing. *æ* (*a*), pl. *ǣ* (*ō*), past part. *o* (*u*). *Cuman* is irregular.

<i>Infin.</i>	<i>3 pres.</i>	<i>Pret. sing.</i>	<i>Pret. pl.</i>	<i>Past part.</i>
beran 'bear'	bi(e)rþ	bær	bǣron	boren
brecan 'break'	bricþ	bræc	brǣcon	brocen
scieran 'cut' (§ 6 (4))	scierþ	scear	scēaron	scoren
stelan 'steal'	stilþ	stæl	stǣlon	stolen

Like *beran* is *teran* 'tear'.

niman 'take'	nimþ	nōm, nam	nōmon, nāmon	numen
cuman 'come'	cymb	cōm	cōmon	cumen

Class V—'Give' conjugation

66. The vowel of the infinitive is followed by a single consonant not a liquid or nasal. This class differs from Class IV only in the past part., which has the same vowel as the infin.

Vowel series: pres. *e* (*ie*, § 6 (4)), pret. sing. *æ* (*ea*), pl. *ǣ* (*ēa*), past part. *e* (*ie*).

cweþan 'say'	cwiþþ	cwæþ	cwǣdon	cweden
etan 'eat'	itt	æt	ǣton	eten
giefan 'give'	giefþ	geaf	gēafon	giefen
(be)gietan 'get'	-giett	-geat	-gēaton	-gieten
metan 'measure'	[met]	mæt	mǣton	meten
sprecan 'speak'	spricþ	spræc	sprǣcon	sprecen

Like *sprecan* is *wrecan* 'avenge'.

The following have weak presents, with vowel *i* (a mutation of normal *e*, which appears in past part.) and a doubled consonant. (In imper. sing. they have *bide*, *lige*, *site*, *pige*.)

biddan 'pray'	bitt	bæd	bǣdon	beden
licgan 'lie'	liþ	læg	lǣgon	legen

<i>Infin.</i>	<i>3 pres.</i>	<i>Pret. sing.</i>	<i>Pret. pl.</i>	<i>Past part.</i>
sittan 'sit'	sitt	sæt	sæton	seten
picgan 'receive'	þigep	þeah	þægton	þegen
Contracted:				
sēon 'see'	si(e)hþ	seah	sāwon	sewen

Class VI—'Shake' conjugation

67. Vowel series: *pres.* *a*, *pret. sing.* and *pl.* *ō*, *past part.* *a* (*æ*). *Standan* drops its *n* in the *pret.* The *past part.* of *swerian* is irregular.

faran 'go'	færþ	fōr	fōron	faren
sacan 'quarrel'	sæcþ	sōc	sōcon	sacen
scacan 'shake'	scæcþ	scōc	scōcon	scacen
standan 'stand'	stent	stōd	stōdon	standen

The following have weak presents, with vowel *e* (a mutation of *æ* from earlier *a*) and a doubled consonant or *-ian*. (*Imper. sing. hefe, swere.*)

hebban 'lift'	hefþ	hōf	hōfon	hafen
scieppan 'create'	scieppþ	scōp	scōpon	scapen
swerian 'swear'	swereþ	swōr	swōron	sworen

Contracted:

slēan 'strike'	sliehþ	slōg	slōgon	slægen
----------------	--------	------	--------	--------

Class VII—'Fall' conjugation

68. This class is of a different type from the rest. The vowels of the infinitive are various. The preterite singular and plural have the same vowel, either *ēo* or *ē*, and the past participle has the same vowel as the infinitive.

(*a*) *ēo* in *pret.*

feallan 'fall'	fielþ	fēoll	fēollon	feallen
healdan 'hold'	hielt	hēold	hēoldon	healden
weaxan 'grow'	wiext	wēox	wēoxon	weaxen
cnāwan 'know'	cnæwþ	cnēow	cnēowon	cnāwen
grōwan 'grow'	grēwþ	grēow	grēowon	grōwen

<i>Infin.</i>	<i>3 pres.</i>	<i>Pret. sing.</i>	<i>Pret. pl.</i>	<i>Past part.</i>
wēpan 'weep'	wēpp	wēop	wēopon	wōpen
(Wēpan is a weak pres., with mutation, the original <i>ō</i> appearing in the past part.; but the inflexion is not affected.)				
bēatan 'beat'	bīett	bēot	bēoton	bēaten
hēawan 'hew'	hīewp	hēow	hēowon	hēawen
hlēapan 'leap'	hlīepp	hlēop	hlēopon	hlēapen

Like *feallan* is *weallan* 'boil'.

Like *healdan* is *wealdan* 'rule'.

Like *cnāwan* are *blāwan* 'blow', *māwan* 'mow', *sāwan* 'sow'.

Like *grōwan* are *flōwan* 'flow', *rōwan* 'row', *spōwan* 'succeed'.

Gangan 'go' belongs to this class, but its preterite does not appear in prose.

(b) *ē* in pret.

hātan 'call'	hǣtt	hēt	hēton	hāten
(on)drādan 'fear'	-drǣtt	-drēd	-drēdon	-drāden
lātan 'let'	lǣtt	lēt	lēton	lāten
slāpan 'sleep'	slǣpp	slēp	slēpon	slāpen

Contracted:

fōn 'seize'	fēhp	fēng	fēngon	fangen
hōn 'hang'	hēhp	hēng	hēngon	hangen

Weak

69. There are three classes of weak verbs: (1) infin. ending *-an* (*-ian* after *r*), pret. sing. *-(e)de*; (2) infin. *-ian*, pret. sing. *-ode*; (3) the group *habban* 'have', *libban* 'live', *secgan* 'say', *hycgan* 'think'.

Class I

70. Nearly all verbs of this class have a mutated vowel in the present. They are subdivided into:

(a) verbs with short vowel followed by doubled consonant or by *r*: *fremman* 'perform', *werian* 'defend'; pret. *-ede*, past

part. -ed: *fremede*, *fremed*. The double consonant of the infinitive appears only in pres. indic. 1 sing. and pl., pres. subj., imper. pl., and pres. part.; and the *i* of verbs like *werian* is confined to these same parts.

(b) verbs with long vowel, or with short vowel followed by two consonants: *hieran* 'hear', *sendan* 'send'; pret. -de, past part. -(e)d: *hieder*, *hieded*. Some have double consonants, and can be distinguished from (a) only historically; they descend from forms with *original* double consonants, as may be seen by comparing related words, e.g. *fyllan* 'fill', *full* 'full'. Double consonants are simplified in pret. and past part.: *sende*, *send*; *fylde*. After *p*, *s*, *t*, -d becomes -t: *dypte* from *dyppan* 'dip', *mëtte* from *mëtan* 'meet'; and -sst becomes -st: *cyste* from *cyssan* 'kiss'. Similarly -cde becomes -hte: *tāhte* from *tācan* 'teach'. The past part. is generally contracted: *send*, *mëtt*, *tāht*; but uncontracted forms are common in some verbs: *fylled*, *dypped*. When declined like adjectives past participles are contracted before endings beginning with a vowel: *hieder*, *hiederne*, but *hieder*.

The 2 and 3 sing. pres. indic. of (b), and often of (a)—but not *fremman* or the -rian verbs—are contracted as in strong verbs. Verbs with double consonant (including *cg*) simplify it in these forms, and also in imper. sing.: *sellan* 'give', *selst*, *selþ*; *sele*.

71.		(a)	(b)
		<i>jremman</i>	<i>werian</i>
			<i>meran</i>
		<i>Present</i>	
<i>Indic. sing.</i>	1.	frem-mc	wer-i(g)c
	2.	frem-est	wer-est
	3.	frem-eþ	wer-eþ
	pl.	frem-maþ	wer-iaþ
<i>Subj. sing.</i>		frem-mc	wer-i(g)c
	pl.	frem-men	wer-ien

	(a)		(b)
	<i>fremman</i>	<i>werian</i>	<i>hieran</i>
		<i>Preterite</i>	
<i>Indic. sing.</i> 1.	frem-eðe	wer-eðe	hier-de
2.	frem-eðest	wer-eðest	hier-dest
3.	frem-eðe	wer-eðe	hier-de
<i>pl.</i>	frem-edon	wer-edon	hier-don
<i>Subj. sing.</i>	frem-eðe	wer-eðe	hier-de
<i>pl.</i>	frem-eden	wer-eden	hier-den
<i>Imper. sing.</i>	frem-e	wer-e	hier
<i>pl.</i>	frem-maþ	wer-iaþ	hier-aþ
<i>Infl. infin.</i>	(tō) frem-menne	wer-ienne	hier-enne
<i>Part. pres.</i>	frem-mende	wer-iende	hier-ende
<i>past</i>	frem-ed	wer-ed	hier-ed

Other verbs of this class are:

	<i>Infin.</i>	<i>3 pres.</i>	<i>Pret. sing.</i>	<i>Past part.</i>
(a)				
trymman 'strengthen'	trymeþ	trymede	trymed	
settan 'set'	sett	sette	sett	
lecgan 'lay'	legþ	legde	legd	

Like *werian* are nearly all in *-ian* after *r*, e.g. *ferian* 'carry', *herian* 'praise', *nerian* 'save', *ge-byrian* 'befit'. (*And-svarian* 'answer' follows § 73.)

(b)				
(æt)iewan 'show'	-iewþ	-iewde	-iewed	
(ā)liesan 'release'	-liet	-liesde	-liesed	
byrgan 'bury'	byrgþ	byr(i)gde	byrged	
cýpan 'make known'	cýþþ	cýpde, cýdde	cýped, cýdd	
dēman 'judge'	dēmþ	dēmde	dēmed	
fyllan 'fill'	fylþ	fylde	fylled	
gierwan 'prepare'	giereþ	gierede	gier(w)ed	
(ge·ān-)læcan 'unite'	-læcþ	-læhte	-læht	
læccan 'seize'	læcþ	læhte	læht	
(ge)liefan 'believe'	-liefþ	-liefde	-liefed	

<i>Infin.</i>	<i>3 pres.</i>	<i>Pret. sing.</i>	<i>Past part.</i>
nemnan 'name'	nemneþ	nemde	nemned
ræcan 'reach'	ræcþ	ræhte	ræht
sendan 'send'	sent	sende	send
tæcan 'teach'	, tæcþ	tæhte	tæht
wendan 'turn'	went	wende	wend

72. A number of verbs of this class which have *-ċ(ċ)*, *-cg*, *-g*, or *-ll* at the end of the root syllable form irregular preterites. The root-vowel is mutated in the present but not in the preterite. Some vowels in the preterite are affected by the sound-change described in § 6 (3), and some by the loss before *h* of *n* which appears in the present.

reċcan 'tell'	recþ	reahte	reaht
cwellan 'kill'	cwelþ	cwealde	cweald
þencan 'think'	þencþ	þōhte	þōht
bringan 'bring'	bringþ	'brōhte	brōht
bycgan 'buy'	bygþ	bohte	boht
wyrċan 'make'	wyrcþ	worhte	worht
þynċan 'seem'	þyncþ	þūhte	þūht
reċcan 'care'	recþ	rōhte	rōht
sēcan 'seek'	sēcþ	sōhte	sōht

Like *reċcan* 'tell' are (*ā*)*streċcan* 'stretch', *weċcan* 'wake'

Like *cwellan* are *sellan* 'give', *tellan* 'count'.

Class II

73. The infinitive always ends in *-ian*, and nearly all verbs with *-ian* infin. after consonants other than *r* belong here. The pret. ends in *-ode*, past part. *-od*. The characteristic vowel of 2 and 3 sing. pres. indic. is *a*, which appears also in imper. sing. So *lufian* 'love':

	<i>Present</i>	<i>Preterite</i>
<i>Indic. sing.</i> 1.	luf-i(ġ)e	luf-ode
2.	luf-ast	luf-odest
3.	luf-aþ	luf-ode

	<i>Present</i>	<i>Preterite</i>
<i>Indic. pl.</i>	luf-iaþ	luf-odon
<i>Subj. sing.</i>	luf-i(ġ)e	luf-ode
<i>pl.</i>	luf-ien	luf-oden

Imper. sing. luf-a, *pl.* luf-iaþ. *Infl. infin.* tō luf-ienne. *Part. pres.* luf-iende, *past* luf-od.

So also: *andswarian* 'answer', *āscian* 'ask', *blissian* 'rejoice', *clīpian* 'call', *eardian* 'dwell', *endian* 'end', *fandian* 'try', *gadrīan* 'gather', *herġian* 'ravage', *leornian* 'learn', *losian* 'be lost', *macian* 'make', *scēawian* 'look at', *timbrian* 'build', *weorþian* 'honour', *wunian* 'dwell', and many others. *Smēagan* 'consider' is contracted in most forms; it has pret. *smēade*.

Class III

74. This class is practically limited to the four verbs *habban* 'have', *libban* 'live', *secgan* 'say', *hycgan* 'think'. The forms are partly like those of Class I, partly like Class II.

<i>Pres. indic. sing.</i>	1. hæbbe	libbe	secge	hycge
	2. hæfst	leofast	sægst	hogast
	3. hæfþ	leofaþ	sægþ	hogað
<i>pl.</i>	habbaþ	libbaþ	secgaþ	hycgaþ
<i>subj. sing.</i>	hæbbe	libbe	secge	hycge
<i>Pret. sing.</i>	hæfde	lifde,	sægde	hogode
		leofode		
<i>Imper. sing.</i>	hafa	leofa	sæge	hyge, hoga
<i>pl.</i>	habbaþ	libbaþ	secgaþ	hycgaþ
<i>Part. pres.</i>	hæbbende	libbende,	secgende	hycgende
		lifiende		
<i>past</i>	hæfd	lifd,	sægd	hogod
		leofod		

Originally of this class is *fetian* 'fetch', pret. *fette*.

Preterite-present Verbs

75. These are a small group of common verbs, largely auxiliaries, which in the present have the form of a strong

preterite. (They are old strong preterites with modified meaning.) They differ in inflexion from ordinary strong verbs in 2 sing., where the ending is *-t*, sometimes *-st*, not *-e*. Their preterite tenses are new weak formations, conjugated like other weak preterites. Few of these verbs are recorded in all forms.

76. *witan* 'know':

	<i>Present</i>	<i>Preterite</i>
<i>Indic. sing.</i> 1.	<i>wāt</i>	wisse, wiste
2.	<i>wāst</i>	wisest, wistest
3.	<i>wāt</i>	wisse, wiste
<i>pl.</i>	<i>witon</i>	wisson, wiston
<i>Subj. sing.</i>	<i>wite</i>	wisse, wiste
<i>Imper. sing.</i>	<i>wite, pl. witap.</i>	<i>Part. pres. witende, past witen.</i>

The contracted negative *nāt* has 2 *sing.* *nāst*, *pl.* *nyton*; *subj.* *nyte*; *pret.* *nysse*, *nyste*.

77. The following are the most important of the others:

<i>Infin.</i>	<i>āgan</i> 'own'	<i>cunnan</i> 'know'	<i>dugan</i> 'avail'
<i>Pres. sing.</i> 1, 3.	<i>āh</i>	<i>cann</i>	<i>dēah</i>
2.	<i>āhst</i>	<i>canst</i>	
<i>pl.</i>	<i>āgon</i>	<i>cunnon</i>	<i>dugon</i>
<i>subj.</i>	<i>āge</i>	<i>cunne</i>	<i>dyge, duge</i>
<i>Pret.</i>	<i>āhte</i>	<i>cūpe</i>	<i>dohte</i>
<i>Past part.</i>	<i>āgen</i> (<i>only</i> <i>as adj.</i>)	<i>cūp</i> (<i>only</i> <i>as adj.</i>)	

Āgan has contracted neg. *nāh*, &c. Like *cunnan* is *unnan* 'grant'.

<i>Infin.</i>		(<i>ge</i>) <i>munan</i>	
	'dare'	'remember'	'be able'
<i>Pres. sing.</i> 1, 3.	<i>dearr</i>	<i>-man</i>	<i>mæg</i>
2.	<i>dearst</i>	<i>-manst</i>	<i>meaht, miht</i>
<i>pl.</i>	<i>durron</i>	<i>-munon</i>	<i>magon</i>
<i>subj.</i>	<i>durre</i>	<i>-myne, -mune</i>	<i>mæge</i>
<i>Pret.</i>	<i>dorste</i>	<i>-munde</i>	<i>meahte, mihte</i>
<i>Past part.</i>		<i>-munen</i>	

	'may'	'be obliged'	'need'
<i>Pres. sing.</i> 1, 3.	mōt	sceal	pearf
2.	mōst	scealt	pearft
<i>pl.</i>	mōton	sculon	purfon
<i>subj.</i>	mōte	scyle, scule	pyrfe, purfe
<i>Pret.</i>	mōste	scolde	porfte

Anomalous Verbs

78. *wesan*, *bēon* 'be':

	<i>Present</i>	<i>Preterite</i>
<i>Indic. sing.</i> 1.	eom bēo	wæs
2.	eart bist	wære
3.	is biþ	wæs
<i>pl.</i>	sind, bēoþ sindon	wæron
<i>Subj. sing.</i>	sie bēo	wære
<i>pl.</i>	sien bēon	wæren

Imper. sing. wes, bēo; *pl.* wesap, bēoþ. *Part. pres.* wesende.
The contracted negative forms are: *neom*, *neart*, *nīs*; *næs*, *nære*,
næron; *nære*, *næren*.

79. *willan* 'will' and its neg. *nyllan* have some mixture of subj. forms in pres. indic. sing.:

<i>Pres. indic. sing.</i> 1.	wille	nylle
2.	wilt	nylt
3.	wil(l)e	nyl(l)e
<i>pl.</i>	willap	nyllap
<i>subj. sing.</i>	wil(l)e	nyl(l)e
<i>pl.</i>	willen	nyllen
<i>Pret. sing.</i>	wolde	nolde

80. *dōn* 'do', *gān* 'go':

<i>Pres. indic. sing.</i> 1.	dō	gā
2.	dēst	gæst
3.	dēþ	gæþ
<i>pl.</i>	dōþ	gāþ

<i>Pres. subj. sing.</i>	dō	gā
<i>pl.</i>	dōn	gān
<i>Pret. sing.</i>	dyde	ēode
<i>Imper. sing.</i>	dō	gā
<i>pl.</i>	dōþ	gāþ
<i>Part. pres.</i>	dōnde	(gangende)
<i>past</i>	ġe·dōn	ġe·gān (gangen)

The participles *gangēnde*, *gangen* belong to *gangan*, a strong verb of Class VII, the preterite of which is not used in prose.

WORD FORMATION

PREFIXES

81. Some prefixes are only particular applications of prepositions or adverbs, and modify in a simple and direct way the meanings of the words with which they are combined. Thus *fore* 'before' combines with *scēawian* 'look at' to form *fore-scēawian* 'foresee'; *tō* 'to' with *cyme* 'coming' to form *tō-cyme* 'arrival, advent'. But others exist only as prefixes. The most important of these are included in the following list.

ā- (1) originally 'forth, away', as in *ā-rīsan* 'rise up', *ā-faran* 'go away'; but generally reduced to an intensive, as *ā-cwellan* 'kill', *ā-hrēosan* 'fall'.

(2) 'ever', gives an indefinite sense to pronouns and adverbs such as *ā-wiht* 'anything', *ā-hwær* 'anywhere'.

æġ-, from *ā-ġe* (with mutation of the *ā* by earlier *-gi*) gives a similar indefinite sense: *æġ-hwelc* 'each', *æġþer* = *æġ-hwæþer* 'either'.

be-, originally 'about', the same as the preposition, (1) retains this sense in a few words, e.g. *be-settan* 'surround', and has a related local implication in *be-foran* 'before', &c.; (2) makes an intransitive verb transitive, as *be-pencian* 'consider' from *pencian* 'think'; (3) gives a privative sense, as *be-hēafdian* 'behead'. In many words it is simply intensive, as *be-lūcan* 'lock', and in some almost meaningless, as *be-cuman* 'come'.

It has a stressed form *bī*, used in nouns such as *bī-geng* 'worship'.

for- in a few words is identical with the preposition *for* 'before', as *for-standan* 'defend'. But in most cases it is of completely different origin, and most commonly gives the sense of loss or destruction, as *for-dōn* 'destroy', *for-weorpan* 'perish'. If the verb with which it is compounded already has some such meaning, it acts merely as an 'intensive, as *for-dilgian* 'destroy'. It often modifies in a bad sense generally, as *for-sēon* 'despise', or implies prohibition, as *for-bēodan* 'forbid'.

ge- originally meant 'together', as in *ge-fēra* 'fellow-traveller, companion' from *fēran* 'travel', or *ge-sweostor* 'sisters'. With verbs its most distinctive function is to signify the attainment of a result by means of the action denoted by the verb: *ge-gān* 'conquer' ('get by going') from *gān* 'go'; *ge-winnan* 'win' ('get by fighting') from *winnan* 'fight'. It also signifies the completion of an action, or the performance of a particular single act as distinguished from the general sense of the uncompounded verb; so that *ge-hieran* and *ge-sēon* mean strictly 'succeed in hearing, seeing'. But, since these verbs very commonly express particular actions, the compounded forms are much used, and come to be extended far beyond their real function. In many verbs the distinction has been altogether lost, so that, e.g., *bindan* and *ge-bindan* are used indifferently. The prefix is generally used in past participles, where it originally gave the sense of completion. It also appears in some nouns denoting the result of an action: *ge-weorc* '(military) work', *ge-writ* 'letter'. Sometimes it gives a causative sense to a verb, as *ge-ān-læcan* 'unite'; sometimes modifies the sense in a particular way, as *ge-faran* 'die' from *faran* 'go'. With pronouns and adverbs it gives an inclusive sense: *ge-hwā* 'everyone' from *hwā* 'anyone', *ge-hwær* 'everywhere', &c.; and cf. *æġ-* above.

on- as a verbal prefix has three distinct origins and functions: (1) identical with the preposition, as in *on-ginnan* 'begin' (with corresponding noun *an-ginn*); (2) originally implying

'against', 'in return', as in *on-gietan* 'perceive' (with corresponding noun *and-giet*); (3) giving the sense of undoing, as *on-lūcan* 'unlock', beside which *un-lūcan* also occurs.

or-, originally 'out', is privative, as *or-sorg* 'unconcerned' from *sorg* 'sorrow', *or-māte* 'measureless' from the root of *metan* 'measure'.

tō- in a few words is identical with the preposition, as *tō-gædre* 'together'. But as a verbal prefix it is almost always quite distinct, and signifies separation or division, as *tō-berstan* 'burst asunder', *tō-teran* 'tear to pieces'; and so often implies destruction, as *tō-weorpan* 'overthrow'.

un- negatives, as *un-gesælig* 'unhappy', *un-mihtig* 'weak'. It is sometimes prefixed to nouns, as *un-rīm* 'a countless number'; and in a few nouns it has a pejorative, not a negative, sense: *un-writere* 'bad writer, careless scribe'.

82.

ENDINGS

Nouns

Personal

-end, from the pres. part. *-ende*, = '-er': *ā-liesend* 'redeemer', *būend* 'dweller', *ċiepend* 'seller', *hælend* 'healer, Saviour'.

-ere, = '-er': *rīpere* 'reaper', *writere* 'writer'; *mynetere* 'money-changer, minter' from *mynet* 'coin'.

-ing, patronymic: *æpeling* 'son of a noble, prince', *Ecgbryhting* 'son of Ecgbryht'; also 'belonging or pertaining to', as *wīcing* 'pirate' from *wīc* 'camp'.

All these are of masculine gender.

Abstract

-nes, from adjectives and participles: *rihtwīsnes* 'righteousness', *welwillendnes* 'benevolence', *ge-recēdnes* 'narrative'.

-þu (-oþ), generally from adjectives: *strengþu* 'strength' from *strang*; *geogop* 'youth' from the root of *geong*.

-ung, less often **-ing**, from verbs: *hergung* 'ravaging' from *hergian*; *sweotolung* 'sign' from *sweotolian* 'show'; *trymning* 'strengthening' from *trymman*.

All the above are feminine. The following exist also as independent words:

-dōm, masc.: *wīs-dōm* 'wisdom', *pēow-dōm* 'service'.

-hād, masc.: *child-hād* 'childhood'.

-rāden, fem.: *ge·cwīd-rāden* 'agreement', *hierd-rāden* 'guardianship', *mann-rāden* 'allegiance'.

-scipe, masc.: *frēond-scipe* 'friendship'; concrete in *wæter-scipe* 'piece of water, water'.

Adjectives

-en, with mutation of the root-vowel, implies 'made of, belonging to': *gylden* 'golden', *stānen* 'of stone', *hæþen* 'heathen' from *hæþ* 'heath'. In *seolcen* 'silk' there is no mutation.

-ig: *mihtig* 'mighty', *hālig* 'holy' from *hāl* 'whole'.

-isc, with mutation: *Englisc* 'English' from *Angel*, *mennisc* 'human' from *mann*.

-sum: *hiersum* 'obedient', *ge·dwolsum* 'mislading'.

The following exist also as independent words:

-fæst: *sige-fæst* 'victorious'.

-full: *ge·lēaf-full* 'pious', *weorþ-full* 'honourable'.

-lēas = '-less': *ār-lēas* 'dishonoured, impious'.

-lic (in origin the same word as *līc* 'body, form'; cf. also *ge·līc* 'like'): *folc-līc* 'popular', *heofon-līc* 'heavenly'; often combined with participles: *unārīmed-līc* 'innumerable'.

-weard = '-ward': *ufe-weard* 'upward, upper'; often meaning 'a (specified) part of': *ealle Cent ēastewearde* 'the whole of east Kent' (acc.).

Adverbs

-e is the regular adverb termination: *lange* 'long', *ge·līce* 'similarly' from *lang*, *ge·līc*. From the frequent combination of

this ending with the adjectival *-lic*, the suffix *-lice* is often used to form adverbs: *blīpe-lice* 'gladly' from *blīpe*.

-unga (-inga) appears in a few words: *eallunga* 'entirely'.

-mælum, originally dat. pl. of *mæl* 'measure', gives the sense 'taken in (specified) quantities at a time': *scēaf-mælum* 'sheaf by sheaf' so 'in bundles'; *styċce-mælum* 'piecemeal' from *styċce* 'piece'.

Verbs

-læcan generally forms verbs denoting action of various kinds from nouns or adjectives: *ge·ān-læcan* 'unite', *ge·efen-læcan* 'match', *ge·pwær-læcan* 'consent' from *ge·pwære* 'agreeing'.

SYNTAX

CONCORD

Adjectives and participles

83. Adjectives agree with their nouns in gender, number, and case, not only when used attributively (as *gōde menn* 'good men'), but also when the adjective follows the noun, either predicatively or in apposition: *pā menn sind gōde* 'the men are good'; *hē ge·seah ōpre idles standan* 'he saw others standing idle'; *hīe of·slōgon ānne geongne Brettiscne mannan, swīpe æpelne* 'they killed a young Briton, of very noble birth'; *ne ā·býhþ næfre Eadmund Hinguare, hāpnum heretogan* 'Edmund will never submit to Hinguar, the heathen general'.

But when a name together with the past participle *ge·hāten* is put in apposition to another noun, both name and participle are left undeclined: *intō ānre byrig, Gaza ge·hāten* 'into a city called Gaza'.

Other participles in predicative use are occasionally left uninflected, or in the nominative, instead of agreeing with nouns they qualify: *Abrahām ge·seah ānne ramm . . . be pām hornum ge·hæft* 'Abraham saw a ram caught by the horns'; *gif ic bēo*

ge-bunden mid seofon rāpum, of sinum ge-worhte 'if I am bound with seven ropes made of sinews'.

When both men and women are referred to by the same adjective, it is sometimes put in the neuter: *hīe ge-samnodon hīe, ealle þā hēafodmenn, and ēac swelce wīfmenn . . . and þā hīe blīpost wæron . . .* 'they assembled, all the chief men, and also women . . . and when they were most merry . . .'. Here *blīpos* is neut. pl., though both *hēafodmenn* and *wīfmenn* are grammatically masculine. But the passage continues: *þā bædon hīe sume . . .* 'then some of them asked . . .', where *sume* is masculine.

Pronouns

84. Pronouns normally have the gender of the word to which they refer: *iċ bidde, gif hwā þās bōc ā-writan wile, þæt hē hīe ge-rihte wel* 'I beg, if anyone wishes to copy this book, that he correct it well', where *hīe* is feminine agreeing with *bōc*. Sometimes, however, a masculine or feminine noun denoting an inanimate object is referred to by a neuter pronoun: *þā þā sēo bōc cōm tō ūs, . . . þā ā-wendon wē hit on Englisc* 'when the book came to us, then we translated it into English', where *hit* refers to the grammatically fem. *bōc*.

A demonstrative *þæt* or *þis* is often connected with a plural predicate by the verb 'to be'. The verb is put in the plural: *þæt wæron þā ærestan scipu . . .* 'those were the first ships'.

The neut. *hwæt* is used interrogatively of persons, even when plural, with the sense 'what manner of': *hē nyste hwæt hīe wæron* 'he did not know what sort of men they were'.

CASES

For the use of cases with prepositions see § 96.

Accusative

85. The accusative is primarily the case of the direct object. It is also used with some impersonal verbs, e.g. *ge-weorpan: swā swā hine selfne ge-wierp* 'as he himself pleases'.

It is often used adverbially, especially to express duration of time: *hwȳ stande gē hēr ealne dæg idle?* 'Why do you stand here all day idle?'; and extent of space: *twā hund mīla brād* 'two hundred miles wide' (*twā hund* is acc., *mīla* partitive gen.). In *hām* 'home(wards)' it expresses motion towards.

Genitive

86. The genitive usually expresses relations between nouns.

The most frequent and important is possession; but it may also define: *on seofon nihta fæce* 'in the space of a week'; *on Agustes mōnþe* 'in the month of August'; or describe: *on þām gēare þe Ælfred æpeling ān and twentiġ gēara wæs* 'in the year in which Prince Alfred was twenty-one'; *þā betstan meregrotan ælcēs hīwes* 'the finest pearls of every colour'.

It is very common in a partitive sense: *hiera fīf* 'five of them'. It is generally used with *fela*, as *fela wundra* 'many miracles', and with numerals when used as nouns, as *fiftiġ wintra* 'fifty years' (§ 40). (But *sum* often agrees with a plural pronoun: *hīe sume* 'some of them'.)

An 'objective' genitive is more frequent than in Mn.E.: *mīn ege* 'fear of me'; *on his wiþ·metennesse* 'in comparison with him'.

With verbs, the genitive is often used to denote the object of various emotions and mental states, such as joy, desire, gratitude, concern: *and hīe þæs fægnode* 'and they rejoiced at that'; *þæs ic ġe·wilniġe* 'that I desire'; *þanciende þām Ælmihtigan ealra his wundra* 'thanking the Almighty for all his wonders'; *ġif hē rōhte his fēores* 'if he cared about his life'. So also with verbs of using, partaking of: *wiþ þām þe mīn folc mōste hiera eardes brūcan* 'provided that my people might enjoy (possess) their country'; *hē ne dorste þæs hēafdes on·bierġan* 'he dared not taste the head'.

Adjectives denoting such feelings also take a genitive complement: *and hīe þæs ġe·fægene wæron* 'and they were glad of that'; *ġe·myndiġ þære sōþan lāre* 'mindful of the true doctrine'. So also do some other adjectives, e.g. *wierþe sleġes* 'deserving of death'.

Some verbs, such as *biddan* 'ask', take an accusative of person

and genitive of thing: *ic bidde þē þæt þū mē þæs nā leng ne bidde* 'I beg you not to ask this of me any longer'.

A different kind of relation, 'ablative' in type, is expressed by the genitive with verbs of depriving, denying, and the like. The object withheld is put in the genitive: *nīs Angelcynn be-dæled Dryhtnes hālgena* 'England is not deprived of the Lord's saints'. Some such verbs take a dative of person: *him wæs of-togen ælcēs fōdes* 'they were deprived of all food'.

The genitive is sometimes used adverbially: *dægēs* 'by day', *ealles* 'altogether', *þæs* 'therefore', 'after that'.

Dative

87. The dative in O.E. has two broad divisions of function: (1) the dative proper, (2) the instrumental dative, interchanging with the formal instrumental where that exists.

(1) The dative proper usually designates personal relations or interest. Its characteristic use is with verbs, to express the indirect object, often accompanied by an accusative of the direct object: *hē sealde ælcum āñne pening* 'he gave each a penny'. It is used also with verbs of addressing and the like: *ic ēow secge* 'I say to you'; *hē þancode his Dryhtne* 'he thanked his Lord'; (but *cweþan* usually has *tō*: *þā cwæþ his hlāford tō him* 'then his master said to him'). So also with many verbs denoting benefit, advantage, disadvantage, influence, &c.: *Hēr bæd Burgred Æpelwulf cyning þæt hē him ge-fultumode* 'In this year Burgred asked King Ethelwulf to help him'; *þām rēpum stierde* 'restrained the cruel ones'; *þæt him biþ æt-broden* 'that shall be taken away from him'; and with less specific verbs with similar implication: *ne dō ic þē nānne tēonan* 'I do you no injury'; *bycgap ēow ele* 'buy yourselves oil'; *hīe worhton āne cīrican weorþlice þām hālgan* 'they built a church to the saint in splendid fashion'.

Some impersonal verbs are accompanied by a dative of the person affected: *nū þyncþ mē* 'now it seems to me'; *swā swā him siþþan ā-ēode* 'as it afterwards happened to him'.

The dative is virtually possessive in many phrases: *hīe slōgon*

him of pæt hēafod 'they struck off his head'; and *hē pone witegan him tō handum ā-scēaf* 'and he thrust the prophet into their hands'. To this is related a frequent idiomatic construction in which a dative noun or pronoun denoting the person concerned is followed by a prepositional phrase with *tō* indicating purpose, intended function, &c.: *hīe ge-sōhton Bretene Brettum tō fultume* 'they came to Britain as a help to (to help) the Britons'; *Gode tō lāce* 'as a sacrifice to God'; *mannum tō sweotolunge* 'as a sign to men'; *pæm sancte tō weorþmynde* 'in honour of the saint'.

With some verbs, especially of motion, a reflexive dative pronoun is used pleonastically: *Abrahām fērde him hām* 'Abraham went home'.

The dative is also used with adjectives of nearness, likeness, &c.: *Eadmund clipode ānne biscop þe him ge-hendost wæs* 'Edmund summoned a bishop who was nearest at hand to him'; *sē biþ ge-līc pæm dysigan menn* 'he is like the foolish man'.

(2) The instrumental dative denotes the instrument or the manner of an action: *hē ge-sndode yflum dēape* 'he died (by) an evil death'; *hiera willum* 'of their own accord'. Hence its use to form adverbs, as *scēafmælum* 'in sheaves'.

It also signifies time when (which may also be expressed by the instrumental itself): *þrim gēarum ær hē forþ-fērde* 'three years before he died'.

A combination of past participle and noun in the dative is sometimes used in imitation of the Latin ablative absolute: *ge-wordenre ge-cwidrædenne* 'an agreement having been made'; *ge-wunnenum sige* 'victory having been won'.

Instrumental

88. The instrumental denotes means or manner: *Gāius se cāsere, oþre naman Iūlius* 'the emperor Gaius, (called) Julius by another name'. It is used to form adverbs, as *micle* 'much, by far', *þy* 'therefore'.

It often expresses time when: *ælice gēare* 'every year'; *þy ilcan dæge* 'on the same day'.

ADJECTIVES

89. The weak forms are used in defining or demonstrative situations, in particular:

(1) after the definite article: *se æpela cyning* 'the noble king'; *þone hālgan lichaman* 'the holy body'; *þæt hālge hēafod* 'the holy head'; *þām ġeswenctan folce* 'to the harassed people'.

(2) after *pes, þis, þeos*: *pes hālga cyning* 'this holy king'; *þās earman landlēode* 'these poor people' (pl.); *þeos nīwe lār* 'this new doctrine'.

(3) often, but not always, after possessive adjectives and the genitive of pronouns: *þine dīeglan goldhordas* 'your hidden treasures'; *mīne clānan handa* 'my clean hands'; *purh his mæran hālgan* 'through his glorious saints'. But *mid mīnum āgnum mægne* 'by my own power'.

(4) usually, but not invariably, in vocative phrases: *þū yfla þēow and slāwa!* 'thou bad and slothful servant!'; *ēalā þū lēofa cyning!* 'oh, beloved king!' But *ic bidde þē, lēof ealdormann . . .* 'I beg you, dear ealdormann . . .',

(5) in the comparative of adjectives, and ordinal numbers: *se hālga is mærra* 'the saint is more glorious'; *nigontēoþe healf ġear* 'eighteen and a half years'.

But *ōþer* always keeps the strong form: *þā ōþru dēor* 'the other wild beasts'. So also do the possessive adjectives: *þās mīn word* 'these words of mine'.

ARTICLES

90. The definite article is omitted as in Mn.E. before names such as *God*; also before *Dryhten* 'the Lord', *dēofol* 'the Devil'—though *se dēofol* also occurs; and before names of nations: *Bretta cyning* 'king of the Britons', and of rivers: *ofer Temese* 'over the Thames'.

It is omitted in many prepositional phrases, some in which Mn.E. also omits it, as *sigefæst on sǣ and on lande* 'victorious on land and sea', but also many others. These are mostly set expressions, as in *hē fēng tō rīce* 'he came to the throne'; *hīe*

siġe nāmon 'they won the victory'; *se flothere fērde eft tō scipe* 'the army of pirates went back to their ships'; but sometimes the reference is more precise, as *se wulf . . . ġe-wende eft sippan tō wuda on-ġēan* 'the wolf afterwards went back again to the wood'.

On the other hand, the definite article is sometimes used where it would not be now: *sēo dēah ġe-hwæper ġe þæs mannes sǣwle ġe his lichaman* 'it is good both for man's soul and for his body'.

When a noun in the genitive, with the definite article, precedes another noun on which it depends, and which would also have an article if it stood alone, only the article in the genitive is used: *æt þæs hālgan byrgenne* 'at the saint's tomb'; contrast *tō þām hālgan bodiġe* 'to the holy body'.

An indefinite article is used much less than in Mn.E.: *þæt dyde unhold mann* 'an enemy did that'; *hē be-stealcode on land swā swā wulf* 'he stole to land like a wolf'. Sometimes it is expressed by *ān*: *ān wulf wearp ā-send* 'a wolf had been sent'; this is used especially in introducing particular persons or things: *ān mann wæs eardiende on Israhēla pēode, Manuē ġe-hāten* 'a (certain) man lived in Israel called Manue'. *Sum* is often used thus: *on þām lande wæs sum mann, Lēofstān ġe-hāten* 'there was a man in that country called Leofstan'.

VERBS

Number

91. With nouns of multitude the verb is usually singular when it is near the noun, but often plural when separated from it, especially in co-ordinate clauses: *se flothere fērde eft tō scipe, and be-hyddon þæt hēafod* 'the army of pirates went back to their ships, and hid the head'.

When a verb precedes a compound subject, it is often put in the singular, agreeing only with the nearest noun: *Hēr bǣd Burgred, Miercna cyning, and his witan Æþelwulf cyning . . .* 'In this year Burgred, king of Mercia, and his councillors asked King Ethelwulf . . . '.

After *ælc þāra þe* 'each of those who' the verb is put in the singular, agreeing with the number not of *þāra* but of *ælc*; *ælc þāra þe þās mīn word ge-hīerþ* 'everyone who hears these words of mine'.

Tenses

92. There are no distinct future forms in O.E. The present tense is used to express future time: *ne ā-bylhþ nāfre Ēadmund Hinguare* 'Edmund will never submit to Hinguar'; *gā gē on mīnne wīngeard, and ic selle ēow þæt riht biþ* 'go into my vineyard, and I will give you what is right'. As this latter example shows, in the verb 'to be' the forms of *bēon* (rather than *eom*, *is*, &c.) tend to be used if a future sense is implied. Other examples are: *gif ic bēo ge-bunden mid scofon rāpum, sōna ic bēo ge-wield* 'if I am bound with seven ropes, I shall at once be overcome'; *swā bēoþ þā fyrrestan ytemeste* 'so the first shall be last'. These forms are also used to express what 'generally happens' ('gnomically'): *ælc mann þe wīsdōm lufað biþ ge-sælig* 'every man who loves wisdom is happy'.

The future is, however, sometimes expressed by *will* and *shall*, almost as in Mn.E., though generally with a sense of volition with the one, and of necessity or obligation with the other: *ic wille þissum ytemestan sellan eall swā micel swā þē* 'I mean to give to this last just as much as I give to you'. Simple futurity appears most clearly in the preterites *wolde* and *scolde* in indirect speech: *hīe wēndon þæt hīe scolden mære on-fōn* 'they expected to receive more' (translating *essent accepturi*).

The preterite has the meaning of the modern

(1) past continuous and past: *þā þā menn slēpon, þā cōm his fēonda sum* 'while men were sleeping, one of his enemies came'.

(2) perfect: *þās ytemestan worhton āne tīd, and þū dydest hīe ge-lice ūs, þe bāron byrþenna on þisses dægēs hātan* 'these last have worked one hour, and you have made them equal to us, who have borne burdens in the heat of this day'.

(3) pluperfect: *þā þā ġe-cōmon þe ymbe þā endleoſtan tīd cōmon* 'when those came up who had come at the eleventh hour'.

Periphrastic tenses are sometimes formed, as in Mn.E., by *hæbbe* and *hæfde* with past participles, and often have the meanings of the modern perfect and pluperfect respectively, as in *nū ic hæbbe ġe-strīened ōþru twā* 'now I have gained another two'; but even the form, with *hæfde* sometimes has the sense of a simple past. The past participle in such combinations is left uninflected in the later language; but earlier it was put in the accusative, because regarded not as part of the verb form but as an adjective agreeing with the noun or pronoun object of *habban*. Both constructions may appear in the same text: *hīe hæfdon hīera cyning ā-worpenne* 'they had deposed their king'; but *and hīe hæfde ær Offa and Beorhtriċ ā-flīemed* 'and Offa and Beorhtric had driven him into exile'.

As in the last example, the pluperfect sense is often emphasized by the addition of the adverb *ær* 'before'. This is also often used with a simple preterite with the same force: *his swēora, þe ær wæs for-slæġen* 'his neck, which had been cut through'.

Periphrastic tenses of intransitive verbs are formed with *wesan* instead of *habban*: *þā hit wæs æfen ġe-worden* 'when it had become evening'; *sippan hīe ā-farene wæron* 'after they had gone away'. Here the participle agrees with the noun or pronoun with which it is connected.

Habitual action in the past is sometimes expressed by *wolde*: *sēo wolde efsian ælċe ġēare þone sanct* 'she used to cut the saint's hair every year'.

Periphrastic tenses formed with *wesan* and the present participle occur frequently, especially translating Latin participial constructions. They do not correspond in sense, except accidentally, to modern 'continuous' tenses. Sometimes they mean no more than a simple tense: *þā wæs se cyning openlīce andet-tende þæt hē wolde fæstlīce þām dēofolġieldum wip-sacan* 'then the king publicly acknowledged that he would resolutely

renounce the idols'. Sometimes they imply duration of an action: *and þær wæs twelf mōnaþ wuniende* 'and stayed there for twelve months'.

Passive

93. Except for the form *hätte* (§ 53),⁶ the passive is formed periphrastically with *wesan* or *weorþan* and the past participle. These forms are very vague in meaning, and the distinction between the two auxiliaries is not clearly marked. Generally *wesan* appears to indicate a state, *weorþan* an action: *nū is sēo bōc swīpe nearolīce ġe-sett* 'now the book is composed in very summary fashion'; *op þæt hē eall wæs be-sett mid hiera scotungum* 'until he was covered all over with their missiles'; *hīe wurdon þā ġe-brōhte tō þām biscope* 'they were then brought to the bishop'. But *his swēora wæs ġe-hālod, þe ær wæs for-slægen, and wæs swelce ān seolcen prǣd ymbe his swēoran rēad, mannum tō sweotolunge hū hē of-slægen wæs* 'his neck, which had been cut through, was healed, and it was as if there were a silken thread, red, round his neck, to show men how he had been slain'.

Subjunctive

94. The subjunctive states something not as a fact, as the indicative does, but merely as an object of thought. Hence it is used to express wish, condition, doubt, and the like.

A. In principal sentences

Wish:

þæs him sīe wuldor ā būtan ende 'therefore glory be to Him ever without end'; *God þē sīe milde* 'God be merciful to you'.

Command (usually third person, where it is equivalent to imperative):

ne hē ealu ne drince oppe wīn 'nor shall he drink ale or wine'.

B. In dependent clauses

(1) In indirect narrative:

iċ him sægde þæt hē for-ealdod wære 'I told him that he was very aged'; and especially in indirect question: *iċ āscīge hwær*

sēo offrung sīe 'I ask where the offering is'; *menn woldon scēawian hū hē lāge* 'men wished to see how he lay'. But when the reported statement contains an objective fact, certain in itself and not given merely on the authority of the speaker, it is put in the indicative: *hē hīere sægde on hwæm his strengþu wæs* 'he told her what his strength consisted in'; *hē sægde þæm ārleasan hū him ge-andwyrð wæs* 'he told the impious man how he had been answered'.

- (2) After verbs of desiring and commanding:

þæs ic ge-wilniġe and ge-wysce mid mōde, þæt ic āna ne be-life 'this I desire and wish in my heart, that I may not remain alone'; *hīe hēton his lēode þæt hīe hine ā-ġēafen tō hīera anwealde* 'they commanded his people to surrender him into their power'.

- (3) After impersonal verbs denoting 'it is right' and the like:

ġeongum mannum ġe-dafenap þæt hīe leornien sumne wīsdōm 'it behoves young men to acquire some learning'.

- (4) To express purpose:

hīe be-hýddon þæt hēafod, þæt hit be-byrged ne wurde 'they hid the head, so that it should not be buried'; *þý-læs ġē pone hwæte ā-wyrtwalien* 'lest you root up the wheat'.

- (5) To express potentiality, especially in clauses dependent on a negative sentence or antecedent:

þū næfst þā miht þæt þū mæġe him wip-standan 'you have not the strength to be able to resist him'; *nis nān þing þe his mihte wip-stande* 'there is nothing to resist his power'.

- (6) To express hypothetical comparison ('as if'):

swelce hē tam wære 'as if he were tame'.

- (7) In concessive clauses:

God hielt Ēadmunde hālne his lichaman, þēah þe hē of moldan cōme 'God keeps Edmund's body whole, though he came from the earth' (i.e. had been buried).

- (8) In clauses of hypothetical condition (usually introduced by *gif* or *būtan*):

gif mannes hēafod tō-brocen sīe 'if a man's head is broken'; *pās flotmenn pē cwicne ġe-bindap, būtan pū mid flēame pīnum fēore ġe-beorge* 'these pirates will bind you alive, unless you save your life by flight'. So also with *wip pām pe* 'on condition that, provided that': *hīe be-hēton hīere sceattas wip pām pe hēo be-swice Samson* 'they promised her money in consideration of her betraying Samson'.

When the condition is assumed to be unreal, instead of merely hypothetical as in the above examples, both clauses have their verbs in the subjunctive; and the preterite tense is used with reference to present time, as in Mn.E. also, where *if I were* implies *I am not*. (The modern distinction between *if I were* and *if I had been* is not made in O.E., which uses *gif ic wære* in both situations.) So *mē lēofre wære þæt ic on ġe-feohte fēolle, wip pām pe mīn folc mōste hīera eardes brūcan* 'I would rather fall in fight, provided that my people might possess their country'; cf. *ic wold^a swiþor sweltan, gif ic þorfte* 'I would rather die (= should wish rather to die) if I had to'.

A condition may also be expressed without conjunction by a verb in the subjunctive placed before its subject: *ic nylle ā-būgan fram his bigengum æfre, swelte ic, libbe ic* 'I will not swerve from his worship ever, whether I die or live'.

Conditions regarded as possible, or 'open', have the indicative: *gif þu eart tō hēafodmenn ġe-sett* 'if you are set in a position of authority'.

- (9) After some conjunctions originally implying anticipation or intended result:

hīne hæfde ær Offa and Beorhtrīc ā-flīemed ær hē cýning wære 'Offa and Beorhtric had driven him into exile before he was king' (strictly 'before he should be king'; but *ær* comes to be used with the subjunctive even when the sense of anticipation is virtually absent); *þīn rīce ġe-wītt fram pē, op þæt pū wite þæt God ġe-wielt manna rīcu* 'your kingdom shall depart

from you, until you know that God has power over the kingdoms of men' (archaically, 'shall know').

In place of the pretorite subjunctive *scolde* with infinitive is often used, as *should* in Mn.E., and *wolde* sometimes. *Scolde* occurs after verbs of desiring, requesting, and commanding: *pū bāde mē þæt ic scolde þē ā-wendan þā bōc* 'you asked me to translate the book for you'; *biddende þone Ælmihtigan þæt hē him ārian scolde* 'praying the Almighty to have mercy on him'; *ic be-bēad þæt sē mann sē ne wære mid his wæpnum æfter fierd-wīsan ge-giered þæt hine man scolde ā-cwellan* 'I gave orders that if any man was not armed in campaign order he should be killed'. (In the relative clause here, *wære* is subjunctive in the indirect command; but it would in any case be subjunctive as virtually conditional.) In the following the command is contained in the noun *ærende*: *hē sende bēotlic ærende, þæt hē ā-būgan scolde tō his mannrædenne* 'he sent a threatening message, that he was to submit to his allegiance'.

Similar use of *scyle* in the present is rarer: *hit ne ge-byrep þæm þe bēoþ ge-corene Godu tō þegnienne þæt hīe ge-þwærlēcan scylen on ænges mannes dēape* 'it is not fitting for those who are chosen to serve God that they should consent to the death of any man'.

Infinitive

95. After verbs of command the active infinitive is used where Mn.E. would require a passive: *hīe hēton him sendan māran fultum* 'they ordered greater forces to be sent to them'. So also after verbs of hearing and the like (still used in *hear tell*): *þæt mæste wæl þe wē secgan hīerdon* 'the greatest slaughter that we have heard tell of'; *gif sum dysig mann þās bōc rætt oppe rædan ge-hierþ* 'if some foolish man reads this book or hears it read'. In such constructions an indefinite object is implied: 'ordered (them, people) to send', &c.

The inflected infinitive preceded by *tō* is used

(1) to express purpose: *ān wulf wearþ ā-send tō be-werienne þæt hēafod* 'a wolf had been sent to guard the head';

(2) to complement the sense of some verbs, e.g. 'begin', 'cease', 'forbid', 'teach': *hē be-gann þā tō winnennē wip þā Philistēos* 'he began then to fight against the Philistines'; *Crīst and his apostolas ūs tæhton ægþer tō healdenne* 'Christ and his apostles taught us to observe both'. Such verbs may also be followed by the plain infinitive: *Peohtas on-gunnon eardian þā norþdælas þisses iēglandes* 'the Picts began to inhabit the northern parts of this island';

(3) to define or determine the reference of an adjective: *þā þūhte mē hefīgtiēme þē tō tīpienne þæs* 'then it seemed to me burdensome to grant you that'; *þæt weorc is swīpe plēolič mē oppe ængum menn tō underbe-ginnenne* 'that task is very hazardous for me or any man to undertake';

(4) to express necessity or fitness: *is ēac tō witenne* 'it must also be known'.

The infinitive of verbs of motion is often omitted after auxiliary verbs: *þær þær hīe tō scoldon* 'where they had to go'.

PREPOSITIONS

96. Some prepositions govern the accusative, e.g. *op* 'until', *purh* 'through', *ymbe* 'about'; some the dative (often the instrumental also), e.g. *æfter* 'after', *æf* 'before', *æt* 'at', *be* 'about, by', *binnan* 'within', *būtan* 'without, except', *for* 'for', *fram* 'from, by', *mid* 'with', *of* 'from', *tō* 'to'.

Some govern both accusative and dative, e.g. *ofer* 'over', *on* 'on, in', *under* 'under'. In general, when motion is implied they take the accusative, when rest is implied, the dative. Thus *on* with accusative means 'into', with dat. 'in'. But the distinction is not strictly maintained; the accusative sometimes occurs where there is no motion, as *on ġe-hwæþere hand* 'on both sides', the dative where there is, as *ymb twā ġear þæs þe hē on Francum cōm* 'about two years after he went to France'. Usually, however, when the usage appears irregular it is explicable by a different attitude to the action: in *sē his hūs ofer stān ġe-timbrode* 'who built his house on a rock', the acc. *stān* may be accounted

for by considering the process of building rather than the completed state. But to express point of time, *on* is used indifferently with accusative and dative: *Abrahām pā ā-rās on pære ilcan nihte* 'Abraham then arose on the same night', but *pā on pone þridðan dæg pā cwæp Abrahām . . .* 'then on the third day Abraham said . . .'. In the sense 'against', *wip* takes accusative more commonly, but also dative: *hīe wip pone here winnende wæron* 'they fought against the (Danish) army'; *hīe ġe-fuhton wip hæþnum herige* 'they fought against a heathen army'.

A few prepositions take the genitive, as well as other cases; e.g. *wip* meaning 'towards', and *tō* of purpose, as *swelce him tō gamenes* 'as if for their sport', or of degree, as *tō þæs* 'to such an extent, so'.

When a thing is referred to, *þær* is substituted for the appropriate case of *hit*, and the preposition is appended to it, so that *þær-tō* corresponds to the masc. *tō him*: *hīe læddon pone cyning tō ānum trēowe*, and *tiegdon hine þær-tō* 'they led the king to a tree, and tied him to it'.

Prepositions often follow, instead of preceding, the words they modify, sometimes with other words intervening. This occurs especially with *on*, *tō*, and the longer prepositions: *Ēadmund cwæp cynelīce him tō* 'Edmund said to him with kingly dignity'; *farap him tō-ġēanes* 'go to meet him'. It is common in relative clauses introduced by the indeclinable particle *pe*, to which the preposition refers: *þām Ælmihtigan tō lofe*, *pe hīe on ġe-liefdon* 'to the glory of the Almighty, in whom they believed'; *þæt hūs pe hē inne wunode* 'the house he was staying in'.

The noun or pronoun modified by a preposition is sometimes left unexpressed, and the preposition functions as an adverb: *cōm þæt land-folc tō* 'the people of the country came there'; *hīe scuton pā mid gafelucum tō* 'they shot at him then with spears'.

Several of the prepositions differ considerably in use from their modern descendants. In particular, *in* is seldom used,

its place being supplied by *on*. The meaning 'on' is in its turn often expressed by *ofer*, as in *ofer stān ġe-timbrod* 'built on a rock'. The commonest sense of *wip* is 'against', 'with' being expressed by *mid*; *of* means mostly 'from', *fram* commonly 'by'.

Some prepositions combine with cases of the pronoun *pæt* to form compound adverbs and conjunctions; e.g. *for pām* 'therefore', *for pām (pe)* 'because', *mið pý* 'when', *wip pām pe* 'provided that'.

NEGATION

97. The negative particle is *ne*, which drops *e* and combines with some common verbs and pronouns, as *nīs* = *ne is*, *nān* = *ne ān*. In a negative sentence the particle is prefixed to every finite verb, and, in addition, to every word which may have a contracted negative form: *hūt nā ne fēoll* 'it did not fall'; *hīe ne nāmon nānne ele* 'they took no oil'. So also with *ne . . . ne* 'neither . . . nor': *ne ġe-seah ic nāfre pā burg, ne ic þone sēaþ nāt* 'I have never seen the city, nor do I know the pit'; *sē pe nāwper nyle ne leornian ne tæcan* 'he who will neither learn nor teach'.

INTERROGATION

98. Direct questions are usually expressed by placing verb before subject: *ne for-lætt hē pā nigon and hund-nigontig?* 'will he not leave the ninety-nine?' Similarly after interrogative words: *Hwý stande ġē ealne dæg idle?* 'Why do you stand idle all day?'

CORRELATION

99. Correlation between subordinate and principal clauses is expressed much oftener than in Mn.E., generally by the use of corresponding words in both: *pā se brýdguma ielde, pā hnappodon hīe* 'while the bridegroom delayed, (then) they dozed'; *pā pā hīe blīpost wæron, pā bædon hīe sume . . .* 'when they were merriest, (then) some of them asked . . .'; *and pý fultumode Beorhtrīc Offan pý hē hæfde his dohtor him*

tō cwēne 'and it was for this reason that Beorhtric helped Offa (namely) because he had married his daughter'. In the following example the pronoun *þæt* (in the gen., governed by *ge-wil-niġe*) anticipates the clause introduced by the conjunction *þæt*: *þæs ic ġe-wilniġe, þæt ic āna ne be-liġe* 'this I desire, that I may not remain alone'.

On the other hand, sometimes a single word bears both the demonstrative and the relative meaning: *hē ġe-brōhte hine þær hē hine ær ġe-nam* 'he brought him to where he had taken him from'. Cf. § 50, end.

100.

WORD-ORDER

Nouns and adjectives

Attributive adjectives normally precede their nouns: *miċel flōd* 'a great flood', *se foresprecena here* 'the army before mentioned'. Names and short phrases in the genitive also usually precede nouns which they qualify, though for rhythm or emphasis they may follow: *West-seaxna cyning* 'king of the West Saxons'; *piſses iēġlandes biġenġan* 'the inhabitants of this island'; but, in Ælfric's rhythmical prose: *and be-hyddon þæt hēafod þæs hālgan Eadmundes* 'and hid the head of the holy Edmund'. When two co-ordinate adjectives qualify a noun, they are usually separated as in the traditional 'good men and true': *þū gōda þēow and ġe-trēowa* 'thou good and faithful servant'.

A title used with a proper name, and without a demonstrative, follows the name: *Ælfred æþeling* 'Prince Alfred'. A common noun qualified by the genitive of such a group is usually placed between the name and the title: *on Cýres dagum cynninges* 'in the days of King Cyrus'; but not always: *on Æþelredes cynninges dæġe* 'in King Ethelred's day'.

For order with prepositions see § 96.

Parts of the sentence

(1) In a simple principal sentence, with no introductory demonstrative and no special emphasis, the normal order of

elements is subject-verb-object: *hēo be-swāc hine* 'she betrayed him'; *ic ġe-sette þē ofer miclu* 'I will set you over great things'; *se cyning hēt hīe feohtan* 'the king ordered them to fight'. When the finite verb is an auxiliary with infinitive or past participle, the object or adverbial adjuncts (or both) often come between the auxiliary and the infinitive or participle: *ic Ælfric wolde þās lýtlan bōc ā-wendan* 'I, Ælfric, wished to translate this little book'; *þæs cyninges hāes wearþ hrædlice ġe-fremed* 'the king's command was quickly carried out'.

Sometimes the object or complement is put first for emphasis, and the order simply reversed: *þā stōwe habbaþ ġiet his ierfenuman* 'that place his successors still have'; *māre is se God þe Daniël on be-liefþ* 'great is the God that Daniel believes in'.

(2) In a principal sentence introduced by a demonstrative adverb or adverbial phrase, especially *þā* 'then', the verb follows the demonstrative immediately, and the subject comes next: *þā rinde hit* 'then it rained'; *þā swigode se cyning* 'then the king was silent'; *þy ilcan ġēare ġe-sette Ælfred cyning Lundenburg* 'in the same year King Alfred occupied London'; *on his dagum sende Gregorius ūs fulluht* 'in his time Gregory sent baptism to us'. The order is thus adverb-verb-subject-(object). Except after *þā*, however, normal order is not infrequent in this type of sentence: *æfter þissum hē fērde tō Philistēa lande* 'after this he went to the land of the Philistines', and especially in the Chronicle after the recurrent *Hēr: Hēr Hengest and Horsa fuhton wiþ Wyrðgeorne*.

A special class is formed by negative sentences, which very often begin with negative particle+verb: *ne cwepe ic nā for þy . . .* 'I do not say therefore . . .'; *ne ā-byhþ Ēadmund Hinguare* 'Edmund will not submit to Hinguar'; *næs mē nāfre ġe-wunelic* 'it was never customary for me'.

(3) In a dependent clause, introduced by a conjunction or relative pronoun, the verb is usually left to the end. An auxiliary verb then follows its associated infinitive or participle. The typical order is connective-subject-object-verb: (*þā æres-tan scipu Deniscra manna*) *þe Angelcynnes land ġe-sōhton* '(the

first ships of Danish men) which came to England'; *þæt hīe þone Godes mann ā·bītan scolden* 'in order that they should devour the man of God'; *gif hwā þās bōc ā·writan wile* 'if anyone wishes to copy this book'; *ǣr þām þe sēo ealde ǣ ge·sett wære* 'before the Old Law had been established'. Absolutely final position of the verb is by no means universal; even when it follows an object or a phrase it is sometimes itself followed by another element: *þæt mæste wæl þe wē secgan hīerdon oþ þisne andweardan dæg* 'the greatest slaughter that we have heard tell of up to this present day'.

This typical order of dependent clauses combines with that of (2) above to form the characteristic pattern of correlative sentences: *þā sēo wyrt wēox, and þone wæstm brōhte, þā ǣt·iewde se coccel hine* 'when the plant grew, and brought forth the crop, then the cockle showed itself'; *þā hīe þā hāmweard wendon mid þære herehýþe, þā mētton hīe micelne sciphere wicinga* 'as they were going homewards with the booty, they came upon a great fleet of pirates'. See also § 99.

The order of (3) is found not only in subordinate clauses such as those illustrated, but also very commonly in co-ordinate clauses joined to the main clause by *and* (also *ac*), especially when the subject is the same as that of the main clause and is left unexpressed: . . . *and nigon scipu ge·fēngon, and þā oþru ge·fliemdon; and hǣþne menn ǣrest ofer winter sǣton* 'and captured nine ships, and put the others to flight; and heathen men first stayed over the winter'.

These three varieties of order are the basic types; but none of them is invariably observed, and much depends on the weight and rhythm of particular phrases and on the individual style of authors. By Ælfric's time a completely modern order (except for the negative) occasionally appears: *wē sculon ā·wendan urne willan tō his ge·setnessum, and wē ne magon ge·biegan his ge·setnessa tō ūrum lustum*.

TEXTS

I

FROM THE GOSPEL OF ST. MATTHEW

VII. 24-27

Ælc þāra þe þās mīn word ġe·hīerþ, and þā wyrçþ, biþ ġe·liç
þām wīsan were, sē his hūs ofer stān ġe·timbrode. Þā cōm
þær reġen and miçel flōd, and þær blēowon windas, and
ā·hruron on þæt hūs, and hit nā ne fēoll: sōþlice hit wæs ofer
5 stān ġe·timbrod.

And ælc þāra þe ġe·hīerþ þās mīn word, and þā ne wyrçþ,
sē biþ ġe·liç þām dysigan menn, þe ġe·timbrode his hūs ofer
sand·ceosol. Þā rīnde hit, and þær cōmon flōd, and blēowon
windas, and ā·hruron on þæt hūs, and þæt hūs fēoll; and his
10 hryre wæs miçel.

XIII. 24-30

Heofona rīce is ġe·worden þām menn ġe·liç þe sēow gōd sǣd
on his æcere. Sōþlice, þā þā menn slēpon, þā cōm his fēonda
sum, and ofer·sēow hit mid coccele on·middan þær·hwæte,
and fērde þanon. Sōþlice, þā sēo wyrt wēox, and þone wæstm
15 brōhte, þā æt·iewde se coccel hine. Þā ēodon þæs hlāfordes
þēowas and cwādon: 'Hlāford, hū, ne sēowe þū gōd sǣd on
þīnum æcere? Hwanon hæfde hē coccel?' Þā cwæþ hē: 'Þæt
dyde unhold mann.' Þā cwādon þā þēowas: 'Wilt þū, wē gāþ
and gadriap hīe?' Þā cwæþ hē: 'Nese: þy·lās ġē þone hwæte
20 ā·wyrtwalien, þonne ġē þone coccel gadriap. Lǣtaþ æġþer
weaxan oþ rīp·tīman; and on þām rīptīman ic secge þām
rīperum: "Gadriap ærest þone coccel, and bindaþ scēaf·mæl-
um tō for·bærnenne; and gadriap þone hwæte in·tō minum
berne."'

XVIII. 12-14

‘Gif hwelc mann hæfþ hund scēapa, and him losaþ ān of þām, 25
hū, ne for-lætt hē þā nigon and hund-nigontig on þām mun-
tum, and gæþ, and sēcþ þæt ān þe for-wearþ? And gif hit
ge-limppþ þæt hē hit fīnt, sōþlice ic ēow secge þæt hē swīþor
ge-blissap for þām anum þonne ofer þā nigon and hund-nigon-
tig þe nā ne losodon. 30

XX. 1-16

Heofona rīce is ge-līc þām hīredes ealdre þe on ærne-mergen
ūt ēode ā-hȳrian wyrhtan on his wīn-geard. Ġe-wordenre
ge-cwid-rædenne þām wyrhtum, hē sealde ælcum ānne pening
wīp his dāges weorce, and ā-sende hīe on his wīngeard. And
þā hē ūt ēode ymbe undern-tīd, hē ge-seah oþre on strāte idle 35
standan. Þā cwæp hē: ‘Gā gē on mīnne wīngeard, and ic selle
ēow þæt riht biþ.’ And hīe þā fērdon. Eft hē ūt ēode ymbe þā
siextan and nigoþan tīd, and dyde þām swā ge-līce. Þā ymbe
þā endleoftan tīd hē ūt ēode, and funde oþre standende, and
þā sægde hē: ‘Hwȳ stande gē hēr ealne dæg idle?’ Þā cwædon 40
hīe: ‘For þām þe ūs nān mann ne hȳrode.’ Þā cwæp hē: ‘And
gā gē on mīnne wīngeard.’

Sōþlice þā hit wæs æfen ge-worden, þā sægde se wīngeardes
hlāford his ge-rēfan: ‘Clipa þā wyrhtan, and ā-ġief him hīera
mēde; on-ġinn fram þām ytemestan oþ þone fyrmestan.’ 45
Eornostlice þā þā ge-cōmon þe ymbe þā endleoftan tīd cōmon,
þā on-fēngon hīe ælc his pening. And þā þe þār ærest cōmon
wēndon þæt hīe scolden mære on-fōn; þā on-fēngon hīe syn-
drige peningas. Þā on-gunnon hīe murcnian on-ġēan þone
hīredes ealdor, and þus cwædon: ‘Þās ytemestan worhton āne 50
tīd, and þū dydest hīe ge-līce ūs, þe bāron byrþenna on þisses
dāges hēatan.’ Þā cwæp hē andswariende hīera anum: ‘Ealā þū
f rēond, ne dō ic þē nānne tēonan; hū, ne cōme þū tō mē tō
wyrccenne wīp anum peninge? Nim þæt þīn is, and gā; ic wille
þissum ytemestan sellan eall swā miçel swā þē. Oppe ne mōt 55
ic dōn þæt ic wille? Hwæper þe þīn ēage mǣn-full is for þām

þe ic gōd eom? Swā bēoþ þā fyrmestan ytemeste, and þā ytemestan fyrmeste; sōþlice manige sind ge·clipode, and fēawe ge·corene.'

XXV. 1-13

- 60 Þonne biþ heofona rīce ge·lic þām tien fāmnum, þe þā lēohtfatu nāmon, and fērdon on·gēan þone brýd-guman and þā brýd. Hiera fif wæron dysige, and fif glēawe. Ac þā fif dysigan nāmon lēohtfatu, and ne nāmon nānne ele mid him; þā glēawan nāmon ele on hiera fatum mid þām lēohtfatum. Þā se brýd-
65 guma ielde, þā hnappodon hīe calle, and slēpon. Witodlice tō midre nihte man hriemde, and cwæþ: 'Nū se brýdguma cymþ, farap him tō·gēanes.' Þā ā·rison calle þā fāmnan, and glenġdon hiera lēohtfatu. Þā cwædon þā dysigan tō þām wīsum: 'Sellaþ ūs of ēowrum ele, for þām ūre lēohtfatu sind ā·cwenctu.'
- 70 Þā andswarodon þā glēawan, and cwædon: 'Nesc; þý·læs þe wē and gē næbben ge·nōg. Gāþ tō þām cīependum, and bycgap ēow ele.' Witodlice, þā hīe fērdon, and woldon bycgan, þā cōm se brýdguma; and þā þe gearwe wæron ēodon inn mid him tō þām ġieftum; and sēo duru wæs be·locen. Þā æt nīehstan
75 cōmon þā ōþre fāmnan, and cwædon: 'Dryhten, dryhten, læt ūs inn.' Þā andswarode hē him, and cwæþ: 'Sōþ ic ēow secge, ne cann ic ēow.' Witodlice, waciaþ, for þām þe ġē nyton ne þone dæg ne þā tid.

XXV. 14-30

- Sum mann fērde on el·þēodignesse, and clipode his þēowas,
80 and be·tæhte him his æhta. And anum hē sealde fif pund, sumum twā, sumum ān: æġhwelcum be his āgnum mæġne; and fērde sōna.

- Þā fērde sē þe þā fif pund under·fēng, and ge·striende ōþru fife. And eall-swā sē þe þā twā under·fēng, ge·striende ōþru
85 twā. Witodlice sē þe þæt ān under·fēng fērde, and be·dealf hit on corþan, and be·hýdde his hlāfordes feoh.

Witodlice æfter miclum fierste cōm þāra þēowa hlāford, and

dihte him ġe·rād. Þā cōm sē þe þā fif pund under·fēng, and brōhte ōþru fife, and cwæþ: 'Hlāford, fif pund þū sealdest mē; nū ic ġe·striende ōþru fife.' Þā cwæþ his hlāford tō him: 90
 'Bēo bliþe, þū gōða þēow and ġe·trēowa: for þām þe þū wære ġe·trēowe ofer lýtlu þing, ic ġe·sette þē ofer miclu. Gā intō þīnes hlāfordes blisse.' Þā cōm sē þe þā twā pund under·fēng, and cwæþ: 'Hlāford, twā pund þū mē sealdest; nū ic hæbbe ġe·striened ōþru twā.' Þā cwæþ his hlāford tō him: 'Ġe·blissa, 95
 þū gōða þēow and ġe·trēowa: for þām þe þū wære ġe·trēowe ofer fēa, ofer fela ic þē ġe·sette. Gā on þīnes hlāfordes ġe·fēan.'

Þā cōm sē þe þæt ān pund under·fēng, and cwæþ: 'Hlāford, ic wāt þæt þū cart heard mann: þū ripst þær þū ne sēowe, and gadrast þær þū ne sprenġdest. And ic fērde of·drādd, and 100
 be·hýdde þīn pund on eorþan. Hēr þū hæfst þæt þīn is.' Þā andswarode his hlāford him, and cwæþ: 'Þū yfla þēow and slāwa, þū wistest þæt ic rīpe þær ic ne sāwe, and ic gadriġe þær ic ne strēdde: hit ġe·byrede þæt þū be·fāste mīn feoh myneterum, and ic nāme, þonne ic cōme, þæt mīn is, mid 105
 þām gafole. Ā·nimað þæt pund æt him, and sellað þām þe mē þā tien pund brōhte. Witodlice ælcum þāra þe hæfþ man selþ, and hē hæfþ ġe·nōġ; þām þe næfþ, þæt him þyncþ þæt hē hæbbe, þæt him biþ æt·brogden. And weorpaþ þone un·nyttan þēowan on þā ūterran þēostru; þær biþ wōp and tōpa 110
 grist-bitung.'

II

OLD TESTAMENT PIECES

A. ABRAHAM AND ISAAC

God wolde þā fandian Abrahāmes ġe·h̅ersumnesse, and clipode his naman, and cwæp him þus tō: ‘Nim þinne ān-cennedan sunu Isaāc, þe þū lufast, and far tō þām lande Visionis hraþe, and ġe-offra hine þær uppān ānre dūne.’

5 Abrahām þā ā-rās on þære ilcan nihte, and fērde mid twām cnapum tō þām fierlenan lande, and Isaāc samod, on assum rīdende. Þā on þone þridan dæg, þā hīe þā dūne ġe-sāwon, þær þær hīe tō scoldon tō of-slēanne Isaāc, þā cwæp Abrahām tō þām twām cnapum þus: ‘Andbīdiap ēow hēr mid þām
10 assum sume hwīle! Ic and þæt cīld gāþ unc tō ġe-biddenne, and wit siþpan cumap sōna eft tō ēow.’

Abrahām þā hēt Isaāc beran þone wudu tō þære stōwe, and hē self bær his sweord and fȳr. Isaāc þā āscode Abrahām his fæder: ‘Fæder mīn, ic āscige hwær sēo offrung sīe; hēr is wudu
15 and fȳr.’ Him andwyrde se fæder: ‘God fore-scēawaþ, mīn sunu, him self þā offrunge.’

Hīe cōmon þā tō þære stōwe þe him ġe-sweotolode God; and hē þær wēofod ā-rærde on þā ealdan wīsan, and þone wudu ġe-lōgode swā swā hē hit wolde habban tō his suna bærnette,
20 siþpan hē of-slāgen wurde. Hē ġe-band þā his sunu, and his sweord ā-tēah, þæt hē hine ġe-offrode on þā ealdan wīsan.

Mid þām þe hē wolde þæt weorc be-ġinnan, þā clipode Godes engel arodlice of heofonum: ‘Abrahām!’ Hē andwyrde sōna. Se engel him cwæp tō: ‘Ne ā-cwele þū þæt cīld, ne þīne
25 hand ne ā-streče ofer his swēoran! Nū ic on-cnēow sōþlice þæt þū swīpe on-drætst God, nū þū þinne āncennedan sunu of-slēan woldest for him.’

Þā be-seah Abrahām sōna under bæc, and ġe-seah þær ānne ramm be-twix þām brēmrum be þām hornum ġe-hæft; and

hē ā-hefde þone ramm tō þære ofrrunge, and hine þær of·snāþ 30
 ·Gode tō lāce for his sunu Isaāc. Hē hēt þā þā stōwe *Dominus*
uidet, þæt is ‘God ge·siehþ’, and giet is ge·sægd swā, *In monte*
Dominus uidebit, þæt is, ‘God ge·siehþ on dūne.’

Eft clípode se engel Abrahām, and cwæp: ‘Ic swerige þurh
 mē selfne, sægde se Ælmihtiga, nū þū noldest ārian þinum 35
 āncennedan suna, ac þē wæs mīn ege mære þonne his lif, ic
 þē nū blētsige, and þīne of·spring ge·manig·felde swā swā
 steorran on heofonum, and swā swā sand·ceosol on sǣ; þīn
 ofspring sceal āgan hiera fēonda gatu. And on þinum sǣde
 beoþ ealle þēoda ge·blētsode, for þām þe þū ge·hiersumodest 40
 minre hāse þus.’

Abrahām þā ge·cierde sōna tō his cnapum, and fērde him
 hām swā mid heofonlicre blētsunge.

B. DANIEL

On Cýres dagum cyninges wrēgdon þā Babilōniscan þone
 witegan Daniēl, for þām þe hē tō·wearp hiera deofol·gield, 45
 and cwædon ān·mōdlice tō þām fore·sægdan cyninge Cýrum:
 ‘Be·tǣc ūs Daniēl, þe ūrne god Bēl tō·wearp, and þone dracan
 ā·cwealde þe wē on be·liefdon. Gif þū hine for·stentst, wē
 for·dilgiaþ þē and þīnne hired.’

Þā ge·seah se cyning þæt hīe ān·mōde wæron, and nīedunga 50
 þone witegan him tō handum ā·scēaf. Hīe þā hine ā·wurpon
 intō ānum sēape, on þām wæron seofon lēon, þām man sealde
 dæghwæmlice twā hriperu and twā scēap, ac him wæs þā
 of·togen ælces fōdan siex dagas, þæt hīe þone Godes mann
 ā·bitan scolden. 55

On þære tide wæs sum oþer witega on Iūdēa·lande, his
 nama wæs Abacuc, sē bær his rifterum mete tō æcere. Þā
 cōm him tō Godes engel, and cwæp: ‘Abacuc, ber þone mete
 tō Babilōne, and sele Daniēle, sē þe sitt on þāra lēona sēape.’
 Abacuc andwyrde þām engle: ‘Lā lēof, ne ge·seah ic nǣfre 60
 þā burg, ne ic þone sēaþ nāt.’

Þā se engel ge·læhte hine be þām feaxe, and hine bær tō

Babilōne, and hine sette bufan þām sēape. Þā clipode sē
 Abacuc: 'Þū Godes þēowa, Daniēl, nim þās lāc þe þe God
 65 sende!' Daniēl cwæp: 'Mīn Dryhten .Hælend, sīe þe lof and
 weorþ-mynd þæt þū mē ġe-mundest.' And hē þā þære sande
 brēc. Witodlice Godes engel þær-rihte mid swiftum flyhte
 ġe-brōhte pone disc-þegn, Abacuc, þær hē hine ær ġe-nam.

Se cyning þā Cýrus on þām seofon dæge ēode drēorig
 70 tō þāra lēona sēape, and inn be-seaħ, and efne þā Daniēl
 sittende wæs ġe-sund-full on-middan þām lēom. Þā clipode
 se cyning mid micelre stefne: 'Mære is se God þe Daniēl on
 be-lief.' And hē þā mid þām worde hinc ā-tēah of þām
 scræfe, and hēt inn weorpan þā þe hine ær for-dōn woldon.
 75 Þæs cyninges hās wearþ hrædlice ġe-fremed, and þæs witegan
 ehteras wurdon ā-scofene be-twix þām lēom, and hīe þærrihte
 mid grædgum ceafum hīe ealle tō-tæron. Þā cwæp se cyning:
 'Forhtien and on-dræden ealle eorþ-būende Daniēles God, for
 þām þe hē is Ā-liesend and Hælend, wyrēnde tǣcnu and
 80 wundru on heofonan and on eorþan.'

C. NEBUCHADNEZZAR

Nabochodonosor, se hǣpna cyning, ġe-hergode on Godes folce
 on Iūdēa-lande, and for hiera mǣn-dædum God þæt ġe-þafode.
 Þā ġe-nam hē þā mǣpm-fatu, gyldenu and silfrenu, binnan
 Godes temple, and tō his lande mid him ġe-lædde. Hit ġe-lamp
 85 eft siþpan þæt hē on swefne āne ġe-sihþe be him selfum ġe-seah,
 swā swā him siþpan ā-ēode.

Æfter þissum ymb twelf mōnaþ ēode se cyning binnan his
 healle mid or-mætre ūp-ā-hefednesse, heriende his weorc and
 his miht, and cwæp: 'Hū, ne is þis sēo micle Babilōn, þe ic
 90 self ġe-timbrode tō cyne-stōle and tō þrymme, mē selfum tō
 wlite and wuldre, mid mīnum āgnum mægne and strengþe?'
 Ac him clipode þærrihte tō swiþe eġeslic stefn of heofonum,
 þus cweþende: 'Þū Nabochodonosor, þīn rīce ġe-wītt fram þē,
 and þū bist fram mannum ā-worpen, and þīn wunung biþ
 95 mid wildēorum, and þū itst gærs, swā swā oxa, seofon ġear,

op þæt þū wite þæt se hēalica God ġe-wielt manna rīcu, and
 'þæt hē for-ġiefþ rīce þām þe hē wile.'

Witodlice on þære ilean tide wæs þeos spræc ġe-fylled ofer
 Nabochodonosor, and hē arn tō wuda, and wunode mid
 wildēorum, leofode be ġærse, swā swā nieten, op þæt his feax 100
 wēox swā swā wif-manna, and his næglas swā swā earnes clawa.

Eft sippan him for-ġeaf se ælmihtiga Wealdend his ġe-witt,
 and hē cwæp: 'Ic Nabochodonosor ā-hōf mīn ēagan up tō
 heofonum, and mīn andġiet mē wearþ for-ġiefen, and ic þā
 blētsode þone hiehstan God, and ic herede and wuldrode þone 105
 þe leofaþ on ēcnesse, for þām þe his miht is ēc, and his rīce
 stent on mægþe and on mægþe. Ealle eorþbūcende sind tō nāhte
 ġe-tealde on his wiþ-metennesse. Æfter his willan hē dēþ æġþer
 ġe on heofonan ġe on eorþan, and nis nān þing þe his mihte
 wiþ-stande, opþe him tō cweþe: "Hwȳ dēst þū swā?" On 110
 þære tide mīn andġiet ġe-wende tō mē, and ic be-cōm tō
 weorþmynde mīnes cyne-rīces, and mīn mennisce hīw mē
 be-cōm. Mine witan mē sōhton, and mīn mārþu wearþ ġe-ēac-
 nod. Nū eornostlice ic mārſiġe and wuldrige þone heofonlican
 Cyning, for þām þe eall his weorc sind sōþ, and his wegas riht- 115
 wise, and hē mæg ġe-ēaþ-mēdan þā þe on mōdignesse farap.'

Þus ġe-ēaþmēdde se ælmihtiga God þone mōdigan cyning
 Nabochodonosor.

III

SAMSON

An mann wæs eardiende on Israhēla pēode, Manuē ge·hāten,
 of pāre mægþe Dan. His wif wæs untiemende, and hie wunon-
 don būtan cilde. Him cōm pā gangende tō Godes engel, and
 cwæp þæt hie scolden habban sunu him ge·mænne: 'Sē biþ
 5 Gode hālig fram his cild-hāde; and man ne mōt hine efsian
 opþe be·scieran, ne hē ealu ne drince nāfre opþe wīn, ne nāht
 fūles ne þicge; for þām þe hē on·ginþ tō ā·liesenne his folc,
 Israhēla pēode, of Philistēa pēowte.'

Hēo ā·cende pā sunu, swā swā hiere sægde se engel, and
 10 hēt hine Samson; and hē swiþe wēox, and God hine blētsode,
 and Godes gāst wæs on him. He wearþ pā mihtig on micelre
 strengþe, swā þæt hē ge·læhte āne lēon be wege, þe hine
 ā·bitan wolde, and tō·brægd hie tō styccum, swelce hē tō·tære
 sum ēapelič tičen.

15 Hē be·gann pā tō winnenne wip pā Philistēos, and hiera fela
 of·slōg and tō scame tūcode, pēah þe hie anweald hæfden ofer
 his lēode. Pā ferdon pā Philistēi forþ æfter Samsone, and hēton
 his lēode þæt hie hine ā·gēafen tō hiera anwealde, þæt hie
 wrecan mihten hiera tēon·rādenne mid tintregum on him.
 20 Hie pā hine ge·bundon mid twām bæstenum rāpum and hine
 ge·læddon tō þām folce. And pā Philistēiscan þæs fægnodon
 swiþe; urnon him tō·gēanes ealle hlūdende, woldon hine tintre-
 gian for hiera tēon·rādenne. Pā tō·brægd Samson bēgen his
 earmas, þæt pā rāpas tō·burston þe hē mid ge·bunden wæs.
 25 And hē ge·læhte pā sōna sumes assan cinn·bān þe hē þær
 funde, and ge·feht wip hie, and of·slōg ān pūsend mid þæs
 assan cinnbāne, and cwæp tō him selfum: 'Ic of·slōg witodlice
 ān pūsend wera mid þæs assan cinnbāne.' Hē wearþ pā swiþe
 of·þyrst for þām wundorlican slege, and bæd þone heofonlican
 30 God þæt hē him ā·sende drincan, for þām þe on pāre
 nēawiste næs nān wæter·scipe. Pā arn of þām cinnbāne, of

ānum tēp, wæter; and Samson þā dranc, and his Dryhtne
·þancode.

Æfter þissum hē fēnde tō Philistēa lande, intō ānre byrig
on hiera anwealde, Gaza ġe-hāten. And hie þæs fægnodon; 35
be·setton þā þæt hūs þe hē inne wunode; woldon hine ġe·niman
mid þām þe hē ūt ēode on ærne-merġen, and hine of·slēan.
Hwæt þā Samson hiera sierwunga under·ġeat; and ā·rās on
midre nihte tō·middes hīs fēondum, and ġe·nam þā burg·gatu,
and ġe·bær on his hrycge mid þām postum, swā swā hīe 40
be·locenu wāron, ūp tō ānre dūne tō ufewardum þām cnolle;
and ēode him swā or·sorg of hiera ġe·sihpum.

Hine be·swāc swā·þēah siþþan ān wif, Dalila ġe·hāten, of
þām hāþnan folce, swā þæt hē hie sægde, þurh hie swic-
dōm be·pæht, on hwām his strengþu wæs and his wundorlice 45
miht. Þā hāþnan Philistēi be·hēton hie sceattas wiþ þām þe
hēo be·swice Samson pone strangan. Þā āscode hēo hine
ġeorne mid hie ōlæcunge on hwām his miht wāre; and hē
hie andwyrd: 'Ġif ic bēo ġe·bunden mid seofon rāpum, of
sinum ġe·worhte, sōna ic bēo ġe·wield.' Þæt swicole wif þā 50
be·ġeat þā seofon rāpas, and hē þurh sierwunge swā wearþ
ġe·bunden. And him man cȳdde þæt þær cōmon his fiend. Þā
tō·bræc hē sōna þā rāpas, swā swā hefel·prædas; and þæt wif
nyste on hwām his miht wæs. Hē wearþ eft ġe·bunden mid
eall·niwum rāpum; and hē þā tō·bræc, swā swā þā ōpre. 55

Hēo be·swāc hine swā·þēah, þæt hē hie sægde æt nīehstan:
'Ic eom Gode ġe·hālgod fram mīnum cildhāde; and ic næs
nāfre ġe·efsod, ne nāfre be·scoren; and ġif ic bēo be·scoren,
þonne bēo ic unmihtig, ōþrum mannum ġe·lic.' And hēo lēt
þā swā. 60

Hēo þā on sumum dæġe, þā þā hē on slæpe læġ, for·cearf
his seofon loccas, and ā·weahte hine siþþan. Þā wæs hē swā
unmihtig swā swā ōpre menn. And þā Philistēi ġe·fēngon hine
sōna, swā swā hēo hine be·læwde, and ġe·læddon hine on·weg;
and hēo hæfde pone sceatt, swā swā him ġe·wearþ. 65

Hie þā hine ā·blendon, and ġe·bundenne læddon on heardum
racen·tēagum hām tō hiera byrig, and on cwearterne be·lucon

tō langre fierste: hēton hine grindan æt hiera hand-cweorne.

Þā wēoxon his loccas and his miht eft on him. And þā Philistēi
70 full bliþe wāron: þancodon hiera gode, Dagon ge·hāten,
swelce hīc purh his fultum hiera fēond ge·wielden.

Þā Philistēi þā micle fcorme ge·worhton, and ge·samnodon
hīe on sumre ūp-flōra, ealle þā hēafod-menn and ēac swelce
wif-menn, þrēo þūsend manna on micelre blisse. And þā þā
75 hīc bliþost wāron, þā bādon hīe sume þæt Samson mōste him
macian sum gamen; and hine man sōna ge·fette mid swīþlicre
wāfunge, and hēton hine standan be·twix twām stānenum
swēorum. On þām twām swēorum stōd þæt hūs call ge·worht.
And Samson þā plegode swīþe him æt-foran; and ge·lāhte þā
80 swēoras mid swīþlicre mihte, and slōg hīc tō·gædre þæt hīe
sōna tō·burston; and þæt hūs þā ā·fēoll call, þām folce tō
dēaþe, and Samson forþ mid, swā þæt hē micle mā on his
dēaþe ā·cwealde þonne he ær cwic dyde.

IV

FROM THE CHRONICLE

Anno 449. Hēr Martiānus and Valentinus on·fēngon riçe, and ricsodon scofon winter. And on hiera dagum Hengest and Horsa, fram Wyr̥tgeorne ge·laþode, Bretta cyninge, ge·sōhton Bretene on þā̃m stede þe is ge·nemned Ypwines-flēot, ærest Brettum tō fultume, ac hīe eft on hīe fuhton. 5

Se cyning hēt hīe feohtan on·gēan Peohtas; and hīe swā dydon, and siȝe hæfdon swā hwær swā hīe cōmon. Hīe þā sendon tō Angle, and hēton him sendan mārān fultum; and hēton him secgan Bret-wēala nāhtnesse and þæs landes cysta. Hīe þā sendon him mārān fultum. Þā cōmon þā menn of 10 prim mæ̃ȝpūm Germānie: of Eald-seaxum, of Englum, of Iotum.

Of Iotum cōmon Cant-ware and Wiht-ware—þæt is sēo mæ̃ȝp þe nū eardap on Wiht—and þæt cynn on West-seaxum þe man nū ġiet hætt 'Iotena cynn'. Of Eald-seaxum cōmon 15 Ēast-seaxe and Sūþ-scaxe and West-seaxe. Of Angle cōmon—sē ā siþþan stōd wēste be·twix Iotum and Seaxum—Ēast-engle, Middel-engle, Miercē, and calle Norþ-hymbre.

455. Hēr Hengest and Horsa fuhton wip̃ Wyr̥tgeorne þā̃m cyninge iñ þā̃re stōwe þe is ge·cweden Æȝles-þrep; and his 20 brōþor Horsan man of·slōȝ. And æfter þā̃m Hengest fēng to riçe, and Æsc his sunu.

457. Hēr Hengest and Æsc fuhton wip̃ Brettas iñ þā̃re stōwe þe is ge·cweden Crecgan-ford, and þār of·slōȝon fēower þūsend wera. And þā Brettas þā for·lēton Cent-land, and mid micle 25 eȝe flugon tō Lunden-byriȝ.

473. Hēr Hengest and Æsc ge·fuhton wip̃ Wēalas, and ge·nāmon unārīmedlicu here-rēaf, and þā Wēalas flugon þā Engle swā swā fȳr.

495. Hēr cōmon twēȝen ealdor-menn on Bretene, Cerdic 30 and Cynriç his sunu, mid fif scipum, in þone stede þe is

ge·cweden Cerdices-ōra; and þȳ ilcan dæge ge·fuhton wiþ Wēalum.

501. Hēr cōm Port on Bretene, and his twēgen suna Bieda
35 and Mægla, mid twām scipum, on þære stōwe þe is ge·cweden
Portes-mūpa; and of-slōgon ānne geongne Brettiscne mannan,
swiþe æpelne.

514. Hēr cōmon West-seaxe in Bretene, mid þrim scipum,
in þā stōwe þe is ge·cweden Cerdices-ōra; and Stuf and
40 Wihtgār fuhton wiþ Brettas and hie ge·fliemdōn.

519. Hēr Cerdic and Cynrič West-seaxna riče on·fēngon,
and þȳ ilcan gēare hie fuhton wiþ Brettas þær man nū nemneþ
Cerdices-ford; and siþþan ricsodon West-seaxna cyne-bearn
of þām dæge.

45 565. Hēr fēng Æpelbryht tō Cantwara riče, and hēold þrēo
and fiftig wintra. On his dagum sende Gregorius ūs fulluht,
and Columba mæsse-prēost cōm tō Pcohtum and hie ge·cierde
to Crīstes ge·lēafan; þæt sind þonne wearderas be norþum
mōrum. And hiera cyning him ge·scalde þæt ieg-land þe man
50 li nemneþ. Þær sē Columba ge·timbrode mynster, and hē þær
wæs abbod twā and þritig wintra, and þær forþ·fērde þā hē
wæs seofon and hund-seofontig wintra. Þā stōwe habbaþ
giet his ierfe-numan. Sūþ-peohtas wæron ær ge·fullode of
Ninia biscope, sē wæs on Rōme ge·lāred.

55 787. Hēr nam Beorhtrič cyning Offan dohtor Ēadburge.
And on his dagum cōmon ærest þrēo scipu; and þā se ge·rēfa
þær·tō rād, and hie wolde drifan tō þæs cyninges tūnc, þȳ
hē nyste hwæt hie wæron; and hine man of-slōg. Þæt wæron
þā ærestan scipu Deniscra manna þe Angel-cynnes land ge-
60 ·sōhton.

836. Hēr Egbryht cyning forþ·fērde. And hine hæfde ær
Offa Miercna cyning and Beorhtrič West-seaxna cyning
ā·fliemed þrēo gēar of Angelcynnes lande on Franc-land ær hē
cyning wære; and þȳ fultumode Beorhtrič Offan þȳ hē hæfde
65 his dohtor him tō cwēne. And sē Egbryht ricsode seofon and

prītiġ wintra and seofon mōnaþ; and fēng Æpelwulf Ecgbryht-ing tō West-seaxna rīce.

851. Hēr Ćeorl ealdorþmann ġe-feaht wiþ hæþne menn mid Defena-scīre æt Wicgan-beorge, and þær miċel wæl ġe-slōgon, and siġe nāmon. And þȳ ilcan ġēare Æpelstān cyning and 70 Ealhhere dux miċelne here of-slōgon æt Sand-wiċ on Cent; and nigon scipu ġe-fēngon, and þā oþru ġe-fliemdon; and hæþne menn ærest oferwinter sǣton.

And þȳ ilcan ġēare cōm fēorþe healf hund scipa on Temese-mūþan, and bræcon Cantwara-burg, and Lunden-burg, and 75 ġe-fliemdon Beorhtwulf Mierċna cyning mid his fierde; and fōron þā sūþ ofer Temese on Sūþrige. And him ġe-feaht wiþ Æpelwulf cyning and Æpelbeald his sunu æt Āc-lēa mid West-seaxna fierde, and þær þæt mǣste wæl ġe-slōgon on hæþnum heriġe þe wē secgan hīerdon oþ þisne andweardan dæg, and 80 þær siġe.nāmon.

853. Hēr bǣd Burgred Mierċna cyning and his witan Æpelwulf cyning þæt hē him ġe-fultumode þæt him Norþ-wēalas ġe-hiersumode. Hē þā swā dyde, and mid fierde fōr ofer Mierċe on Norþ-wēalas, and hīe him ealle ġe-hiersume dydon. And 85 þȳ ilcan ġēare sende Æpelwulf cyning Ælfred his sunu tō Rōme. Þā wæs domne Lēo pāpa on Rōme, and hē hine tō cyinge ġe-hālgode, and hine him tō biscop-suna nam.

Þā þȳ ilcan ġēare Ealhhere mid Cantwarum and Huda mid Sūþrigam ġe-fuhton on Tenet wiþ hæþnum heriġe, and ærest 90 siġe nāmon; and þær wearþ maniġ mann of-slāġen and ā-drun-cen on ġe-hwæþere hand. And þæs ofer Ēastran ġeaf Æpelwulf cying his dohtor Burgrede cyinge of West-seaxum on Mierċe.

855. Hēr hæþne menn ærest on Scēap-īeġe ofer winter sǣton. And þȳ ilcan ġēare ġe-bōcode Æpelwulf cying tēoþan 95 dǣl his landes ofer eall his rīce Gode tō lofe, and him selfum tō ēċre hǣlu; and þȳ ilcan ġēare fērde tō Rōme mid miċelre weorþnesse, and þær wæs twelf mōnaþ wuniende, and þā him hām-weard fōr. And him þā Carl Francna cyning his dohtor ġeaf him tō cwēne; and æfter þām tō his lēodum cōm, and 100 hīe þæs ġe-fǣġene wǣron. And ymb twā ġear þæs þe hē on

Francum cōm, hē ge·fōr; and his lič līp æt Wintan-ċeastre. And hē ricsode nigontēoþe healf gēar.

865. Hēr sæt hāþen here on Tenet, and ge·nāmon friþ wīp
 105 Cantwarum, and Cantware him feoh ge·hēton wīp þām friþe;
 and under þām friþe and þām feoh-ge·hāte se here hine on
 niht ūp be·stæl, and ofer·hergode ealle Cent eastewearde.

866. Hēr fēng Æþelred Æþelbryhtes brōþor tō West-seaxna
 riče. And þy ilcan gēare cōm mičel hēre on Angelcynnes land,
 110 and winter-setl nāmon on Ēast-englum, and þær ge·horsode
 wurdon; and hīe him wīp friþ nāmon.

867. Hēr fōr se here of Ēast-englum ofer Humbre-mūþan
 to Eoforwīc-ċeastre on Norþ-hymbre. And þær wæs mičel
 ungeþwærnes þære þeode be·twix him selfum, and hīe hæfdon
 115 hīera cyning ā·worpenne Ōsbryht, and ungecyndne cyning
 under·fēngon Ællan. And hīe late on gēare tō þām ge·cierdon
 þæt hīe wīp þone here winnende wæron; and hīe þeah micle
 fierd ge·gadrodon, and þone here sōhton æt Eoforwīc-ċeastre;
 and on þā ċeastre bræcon, and hīe sume inne wurdon. And
 120 þær wæs ungemetlič wæl ge·slægen Norþanhymbra, sume
 binnan, sume būtan, and þā cyningas bēgen of·slægene; and
 sēo lāf wīp þone here friþ nam.

868. Hēr fōr se ilca here innan Mierce tō Snotinga-hām,
 and þær wintersetl nāmon; and Burgred Miercna cyning and
 125 his witan bædon Æþelred West-seaxna cyning and Ælfred his
 brōþor þæt hīe him ge·fultumoden þæt hīe wīp þone here
 ge·fuhten. And þā fērdon hīe mid West-seaxna fierde innan
 Mierce oþ Snotinga-hām, and þone here þær mēttan on þām
 ge·weorce; and þær nān hefelič ge·feoht ne wearþ, and Mierce
 130 friþ nāmon wīp þone here.

885. Hēr tō·dælde se fore-spreccna here on tū, oþer dæl
 ēast, oþer dæl tō Hrofes-ċeastre; and ymb·sæton þā ċeastre,
 and worhton oþer fæsten ymb hīe selfe. And hīe þeah þā
 ċeastre ā·weredon oþ þæt Ælfred cōm ūtan mid fierde. Þā
 135 eode se here tō hīera scipum, and for·lēt þæt ge·weorc; and
 hīe wurdon þær be·horsode, and sōna þy ilcan sumere ofer sǣ
 ge·witon.

And þȳ ilcan ġēare sende Ælfred cyning scip-here on Ēast-
engle. Sōna swā hīe cōmon on Stūre-mūþan, þā mētton hīe
siextiene scipu wīcinga, and wip þā ġe-fuhton, and þā scipu 140
eall ġe-ræhton, and þā menn of-slōgon. Þā hīe þā hāmweard
wendon mid þære here-hȳpe, þā mētton hīe micelne sciphere
wīcinga, and þā wip þā ġe-fuhton þȳ ilcan dæge, and þā
Deniscan ahton siġe.

886. Hēr fōr se here eft west þe ær ēast ġe-lende, and þā 145
ūp on Sīgene, and þær wintersetl nāmon. Þȳ ilcan ġēare ġe-sette
Ælfred cyning Lunden-burg, and him eall Angelcynn tō cīerde,
þæt būtan Deniscra manna hæft-nīede wæs; and hē þā be-fæste
þā burg Æpelrede ealdormenn tō healdenne.

PREFACES BY ÆLFRIC

A. TO HIS LATIN GRAMMAR

Ic Ælfric wolde þas lýtlan bōc ā-wendan tō Engliscum ġe·reorde of þām stæf-cræfte þe is ġe·hāten *grammatica*, siþþan ic þā twā bēc ā-wende on hund·eahtatigum spellum, for þām þe stæfcræft is sēo cæg þe þāra bōca andġiet un·lȳcþ; and ic þōhte
 5 þæt þēos bōc mihte fremian ġeongum cildum tō anġinne þæs cræftes, oþ þæt hīe tō māran andġiete be·cumen.

Ælcum menn ġe·byreþ, þe ænigne gōdne cræft hæfþ, þæt hē þone dō nytne oþrum mannum, and be·fæste þæt pund þe him God be·fæste sumum oþrum menn, þæt Godeſ feoh ne
 10 æt·licge and hē bēo lȳpre þēowa ġe·hāten and bēo ġe·bunden and ġe·worpen in·tō þēostrum, swā swā þæt hālġe god·spell sægþ. Ģeongum mannum ġe·dasehāþ þæt hīe leornien sumne wis·dōm, and þām ealdum ġe·dafenaþ þæt hīe tæcēn sum ġe·rād hiera ġeonglingum, for þām þe þurh lāre biþ se ġe·lēafa
 15 ġe·healden. And ælc mann þe wīsdōm lufaþ biþ ġe·sælig, and sē þe nāwþer nyle ne leornian ne tæcān, ġif hē mæg, þonne ā·cōlaþ his andġiet fram þære hālgan lāre, and hē ġe·witt swā lýtlum and lýtlum fram Gode.

Hwanon sculon cuman wīse lārēowas on Godeſ folce, būtan
 20 hīe on ġeogope leornien? And hū mæg se ġe·lēafa bēon forp·genġe ġif sēo lār and þā lārēowas ā·tēoriaþ? Is nū for þȳ Godeſ þēowum and mynster·mannum ġeorne tō wearnienne þæt sēo hālġe lār on ūrum dagum ne ā·cōlġe oþpe ā·tēorige, swā swā hit wæs ġe·dōn on Angelcynne nū for ānum fēam ġearum, swā
 25 þæt nān Englisc prēost ne cūpe dihtan oþpe ā·smēaġan ānne pistol on Læden, oþ þæt Dūnstān ærce·biscop and Æpelwold biscop eft þā lāre on munuc·lifum ā·rærdon. Ne cwepe ic nā for þȳ þæt þēos bōc mæġe miclum tō lāre fremian, ac hēo biþ swā·þeah sum anġinn tō æġþrum ġe·reorde, ġif hēo hwām licap.

Ic bidde nū on Godes naman, gif hwā pās bōc ā-writan wile, 30
 þæt hē hīe ġe-rihte wel be pære bȳsne; for þām þe ic nāh
 ġe-weald pēah hīe hwā tō wō ġe-bringe þurh lēase writeras, and
 hit biþ þonne his pleoh, nā mīn. Miċel yfel dēþ se unwritere,
 gif he nyle his wōh ġe-rihtan.

• B. TO HIS TRANSLATION OF *GENESIS*

Ælfrīc munuc grētt Æpelweard ealdormann ēaþ-mōdlice. Þū 35
 bæde mē, lēof, þæt ic scolde þē ā-wendan of Lædene on Englisc
 þā bōc *Genesis*. Þā pūhte mē hefig-tieme þē tō tīpienne pæs,
 and þū cwæde þā þæt ic ne þorfte nā mære ā-wendan pære bēc
 būtan tō Isaāce, Abrahāmes suna, for þām þe sum oþer mann
 þē hæfde ā-wend fram Isaāce þā bōc oþ ende. Nū þyncþ mē, 40
 lēof, þæt þæt weorc is swīpe plēolic mē oþpe ængum menn tō
 under-be-ġinnenne, for þām þe ic on-dræde, gif sum dysig
 mann pās bōc rætt oþpe rædan ġe-hierþ, þæt hē wile wēnan
 þæt hē mōte libban nū on pære niwan æ swā swā þā ealdan
 fæderas leofodon þā on pære tīde ær þām þe sēo ealde æ ġe-sett 45
 wære, oþpe swā swā menn leofodon under Moyses æ. Hwīlum
 ic wiste þæt sum mæsse-prēost, sē þe mīn magister wæs on
 þām tīman, hæfde þā bōc *Genesis*, and hē cūpe be dæle Læden
 under-standan. Þā cwæþ hē be þām hēah-fædere Iacobe þæt
 hē hæfde fēower wīf, twā ġe-sweostor and hīera twā þīnena. 50
 Full sōþ hē sægde, ac hē nyste, ne ic þā ġiet, hū miċel tō-dāl
 is be-twix pære ealdan æ and pære niwan.

Gif hwā wile nū swā libban, æfter Cristes tō-cyme, swā swā
 menn leofodon ær Moyses æ oþpe under Moyses æ, ne biþ sē
 mann nā crīsten, ne hē furpum wierpe ne biþ þæt him ænig 55
 crīsten mann mid etc. Þā unġelærdan prēostas, gif hīe hwæt
 lýtles under-standaþ of þām Læden-bōcum, þonne þyncþ him
 sōna þæt hīe magon mære lārēowas bēon, ac hīe ne cunnon
 swā-pēah þæt ġastlice andġiet pær-tō, and hū sēo ealde æ wæs
 ġe-tācnung tō-weardra þīnga, oþpe hū sēo nīwe ġe-cȳpnes 60
 æfter Cristes menniscnesse wæs ġe-fyllednes ealra þāra þīnga
 þe sēo ealde ġe-cȳpnes ġe-tācnode tōwearde be Crīste and be

his ge·corenum. Prēostas sindon ge·sette tō lārēowum þām
lāwedan folce. Nū ge·dafenode him þæt hīe cūpen þā ealdan
65 æ gāstlice under·standan, and hwæt Crīst self tæhte and his
apostolas on þære niwan ge·cýþnesse, þæt hīe mihten þām
folce wel wissian tō Godes ge·lēafan, and wel bȳsnian tō gōdum
weorcum.

Nū is sēo fore-sæġde bōc on manigum stōwum swīpe nearo-
70 lice ge·sett, and þeah swīpe dēoplice on þām gāstlican andġiete;
and hēo is swā ge·ende-byrd swā swā God self hīe ge·dihte þām
writere Moyse, and wē ne durron nā māre ā·writan on Englisc
þonne þæt Læden hæfþ, ne þā endebyrdnesse ā·wenden, būtan
þām ānum, þæt þæt Læden and þæt Englisc nabbap nā āne
75 wisan on þære spræc fadunge. Æfre sē þe ā·went oþþe sē þe
tæcþ of Lædene on Englisc, æfre hē sceal ge·fadian hit swā
þæt þæt Englisc hæbbe his āgene wisan, elles hit biþ swīpe
ge·dwolsum tō rædenne þām þe þæs Lædenes wisan ne cann.
Is ēac tō witenne þæt sume ge·dwol-menn wæron þe woldon
80 ā·weorpan þā ealdan æ, and sume woldon habban þā ealdan and
ā·weorpan þā niwan, swā swā þā fūdēiscan dōþ; ac Crīst self
and his apostolas ūs tæhton æġþer tō healdenne, þā ealdan
gāstlice and þā niwan sōþlice mid weorcum. God ge·scōp ūs
twā ēagan and twā ēaran, twā nos-þȳrlu and twēġen weleras,
85 twā handa and twēġen fēt, and hē wolde ēac habban twā
ge·cýþnessa on þisse worulde ge·sett, þā ealdan and þā niwan;
for þām þe hē dēþ swā swā hine selfne ge·wierþ, and hē nānne
ræd-boran næfþ, ne nān mann ne þearf him cweþan tō: 'Hwȳ
dēst þū swā?' Wē sculon ā·wenden ūrne willan tō his ge·set-
90 nessum, and wē ne magon ge·biegan his ge·setnessa tō ūrum
lustum.

Ic cweþe nū þæt ic ne dearr ne ic nylle nāne bōc æfter þisse
of Lædene on Englisc ā·wenden; and ic bidde þē, lēof ealdor-
mann, þæt þū mē þæs nā leng ne bidde, þȳlæs þe ic bēo þē
95 unġhiersum, oþþe lēas ġif ic dō. God þē sīe milde ā on
ēcnesse.

VI

KING EDMUND

Sum swiþe ge·læred munuc cōm sūþan ofer sǣ fram sancte
 Benedictes stōwe, on Æþelredes cyninges dæge, tō Dūnstāne
 ærce-biscope, þrim gēarum ær hē forþ·fērde, and se munuc
 hātte Abbo. Þā wurdon hīe æt sprǣce, op þæt Dūnstān reahte 5
 be sancte Ēadmunde, swā swā Ēadmundes sweord-bora hit
 reahte Æþelstāne cyninge, þā þā Dūnstān geong mann wæs,
 and se sweordbora wæs for·caldod mann. Þā ge·sette se munuc
 ealle þā ge·recednesse on ānre bēc, and eft, þā þā sēo bōc cōm
 tō ūs, binnan fēam gēarum, þā ā-wendon wē hit on Englisc,
 swā swā hit hēr·æfter stent. Se munuc þā Abbo binnan twām 10
 gēarum ge·wende hām tō his mynstre, and wearþ sōna tō
 abbode ge·sett on þām ilcan mynstre.

Ēadmund se ēadiga, Ēast-engla cyning, wæs snotor and
 weorþ·full, and weorþode simle mid æpelum þēawum þone
 ælmihtigan God. Hē wæs ēap·mōd and ge·þungen, and swā 15
 ān·rǣd þurh·wunode þæt hē nolde ā·būgan tō bismer·fullum
 leahtrum, ne on nāwpre healfē hē ne ā·hieldē his þēawas, ac
 wæs simle ge·myndig þære sōþan lāre: 'Gif þū eart tō heafod-
 menn ge·sett, ne ā·hefe þū þē, ac bēo be·twix mannum swā
 swā ān·mann of him.' Hē wæs cystig wādlum and widewum 20
 swā swā fæder, and mid wel·willendnesse ge·wissode his folc
 simle tō riht·wisnesse, and þām rēpum stierde, and ge·sǣlig-
 lice leofode on sōpum ge·lēafan.

Hit ge·lamp þā æt niehstan þæt þā Deniscan lēode fērdon
 mid scip·here, hergiende and slēande wīde geond land, swā 25
 swā hiera ge·wuna is. On þām flotan wāron þā fyrmestan
 hēafodmenn, Hinguar and Hubba, ge·ānlāhte þurh deofol, and
 hīe on Norphymbra·lande ge·lendon mid æscum, and ā·wēston
 þæt land, and þā lēode of·slōgon. Þā ge·wende Hinguar east
 mid his scipum, and Hubba be·lāf on Norphymbra·lande, 30
 ge·wunnenum siġe mid wæl·hrēownesse. Hinguar þā be·cōm

tō Æast-englum rōwende on þām gēare þe Ælfred æþeling ān
 and twentiġ gēara wæs, sē þe West-seaxna cyning sippan wearþ
 mære. And se fore-sægða Hinguar færlīce, swā swā wulf, on
 35 land be-stealcode, and þā lēode slōg, weras and wif and þā
 unwittigan cild, and tō bismere tūcode þā bile-witan cristenan.
 Hē sende þā sōna sippan tō þām cyninge bēotlic ærende, þæt
 hē ā·būgan scolde tō his mann-rædenne, ġif hē rōhte his
 fēores. Se ærend-raca cōm þā tō Æādmunde cyninge, and
 40 Hingwares ærende him arodlice ā·bēad: 'Hinguar ūre cyning,
 cēne and sigefæst on sǣ and on lande, hæfþ fela lēoda ġe·weald,
 and cōm nū mid fierde færlīce hēr tō lande, þæt hē hēr
 winter-setl mid his werode hæbbe. Nū hǣtt hē þē dǣlan
 þine dieġlan gold-hordas and þinra ieldrena ġe·strēon arodlice
 45 wiþ hine, and þū bēo his under-cyning, ġif þū cwic bēon
 wilt, for þām þe þū næfst þā miht þæt þū mæġe him wiþ·stan-
 dan.'

Hwæt þā Æādmund cyning clipode āne biscop þe him þā
 ġe·hendost wæs, and wiþ hine smēade hū hē þām rēpan Hin-
 50 guare andwyrðan scolde. Þā forhtode se biscop for þām færlī-
 can ġe·limpe, and for þæs cyninges life, and cwæþ þæt him
 rād þūhte þæt hē tō þām ġe·buge þe him bēad Hinguar. Þā
 swigode se cyning, and be-seah tō þære eorþan, and cwæþ þā
 æt nīehstan cynelīce him tō: 'Ēalā þū biscop, tō bismere sind
 55 ġe·tāwode þās earman land-lēode, and mē nū lēofre wære þæt
 ic on ġe·feohte fēolle, wiþ þām þe mīn folc mōste hīerā eardes
 brūcan.' And se biscop cwæþ: 'Ēalā þū lēofa cyning, þīn folc
 līþ of-slāgen, and þū næfst þone fultum þæt þū feohtan mæġe,
 and þās flot-menn cumað, and þē cwicne ġe·bindað, būtan þū
 60 mid flēame þīnum fēore ġe·beorge, oppe þū þē swā ġe·beorge
 þæt þū būge tō him.' Þā cwæþ Æādmund cyning, swā swā hē
 full cēne wæs: 'Þæs ic ġe·wilniġe and ġe·wysce mid mōde, þæt
 ic āna ne be-life æfter mīnum lēofum þegnum, þe on hīera
 bedde wurdon mid bearnum and wifum færlīce of-slāgene
 65 fram þīssum flotmannum. Næs mē nāfre ġe·wuneliġ þæt ic
 worhte flēames, ac ic wolde swīpor sweltan, ġif ic þorfte, for
 mīnum āġnum earde, and se ælmihtiga God wāt þæt ic nylle

ā·būgan fram his bī·gengum æfre, ne fram his sōpan lufe,
'swelte ic, libbe ic.'

Æfter þissum wordum hē ge·wende tō þām ærendracan þe 70
Hinguar him tō sende, and sægde him unforht: 'Witodlice þū
wære wierpe sleges nū, ac ic nylle ā·fȳlan on þīnum fūlum
blōde mīne clānan handa, for þām þe ic Criste folgige, þe ūs
swā ge·bȳsnode; and ic bliþelice wille bēon of·slāgen þurh ēow,
gif hit swā God fore·seāwap. Far nū swiþe hraþe, and sege 75
þīnum rēpan hlāforde: "Ne ā·bȳhp nāfre Ēadmund Hingware
on life, hāpnum here·togan, būtan hē tō Hælende Criste ærest
mid ge·lēafan on þissum lande ge·būge."'

Þā ge·wende se ærendraca arodlice on·weg, and ge·mētte be
wege þone wælhrēowan Hinguar mid ealre his fierde fūse tō 80
Ēadmunde, and sægde þām ār·lēasan hū him ge·andwyrd wæs.
Hinguar þā be·bēad mid bieldu þām sciphre þæt hīe þæs
cyniges ānes ealle cēpan scolden, þe his hāse for·seah, and
hine sōna bindan.

Hwæt þā Ēadmund cyning, mid þām þe Hinguar cōm, stōd 85
innan his healle, þæs Hælendes ge·myndig, and ā·wearp his
wāpnu; wolde ge·efenlēcan Cristes ge·bȳsnungum, þe for·bēad
Petre mid wāpnum tō winnenne wiþ þā wælhrēowan Iūdēiscan.
Hwæt þā ārlēasan þā Ēadmund ge·bundon, and ge·bismrodon
huxlice, and bēoton mid sāglum, and swā siþþan lāddon þone 90
ge·lēaffullan cyning tō ānum eorþ·fæstum trēowe, and tiegdon
hine þær·tō mid heardum bendum, and hine eft swungen
langlice mid swipum; and hē simle clipode be·twix þām
swinglum mid sōpum ge·lēafan tō Hælende Criste; and þā
hāpnan þā for his ge·lēafan wurdon wōdlice ierre, for þām 95
þe hē clipode Crist him tō fultume. Hīe scuton þā mid gafe·
lucum, swelce him tō gamenes, tō, oþ þæt hē eall wæs be·sett
mid hiera scotungum, swelce īles byrsta, swā swā Sebastiānus
wæs. Þā ge·seah Hinguar, se ārlēasa flotmann, þæt se æpela
cyning nolde Criste wiþ·sacan, ac mid ānrædum ge·lēafan hine 100
æfre clipode. Hēt hine þā be·hēafdian, and þā hāpnan swā
dydon. Be·twix þām þe hē clipode tō Criste þā giet, þā tugon
þā hāpnan þone hālgan tō slege, and mid ānum swenge slōgon

him of þæt hēafod, and his sǣwol sīpode ge·sǣlig tō Crīste.
 105 Þær wæs sum mann ge·hende, ge·healden þurh God be·hýdd
 þām hǣþnum, þe þis ge·hīerde call, and hit eft sægde, swā
 swā wē hit secgaþ hēr.

Hwæt þā se flot·here fērde eft tō sciþe, and be·hýddon þæt
 hēafod þæs hālgan Ēadmundes on þām þiccum brēm lum, þæt
 110 hit be·byrged ne wurde. Þā æfter fierste, sippan hīe ā·farene
 wǣron, cōm þæt land·folc tō, þe þær tō lāfe wæs þā, þær hīera
 hlāfordes lic læg būtan hēafde, and wurdon swīpe sārge for his
 slege on mōde, and hūru þæt hīe næfdon þæt hēafod tō þām
 bodige. Þā sægde se scēawere, þe hit ær ge·seah, þæt þā flot·
 115 menn hæfdon þæt hēafod mid him; and wæs him ge·þūht, swā
 swā hit wæs full sōþ, þæt hīe be·hýdden þæt hēafod on þām
 holte for·hwega.

Hīe ēodon þā ealle endemes tō þām wuda, sēcende ge·hwær,
 geond þýflas and brēmlas, gif hīe ā·hwær mihten ge·mētan
 120 þæt hēafod. Wæs ēac micel wundor þæt ān wulf wearþ ā·send,
 þurh Godes wissunge, tō be·werienne þæt hēafod wiþ þā ōþru
 dēor ofer dæg and niht. Hīe ēodon þā sēcende and simle
 clipiende, swā swā hit ge·wunelic is þām þe on wuda gāþ oft:
 ‘Hwær eart þū nū, ge·fēra?’ And him andwyrde þæt hēafod:
 125 ‘Hēr, hēr, hēr’; and swā ge·lōme clipode andswariende him
 eallum, swā oft swā hīera ænig clipode, oþ þæt hīe ealle be·
 cōmon þurh þā clipunge him tō. Þā læg se grāga wulf þe
 be·wiste þæt hēafod, and mid his twām fōtum hæfde þæt
 hēafod be·clypped, grædig and hungriġ, and for Gode ne dorste
 130 þæs hēafdes on·bierġan, ac hēold hit wiþ dēor. Þā wurdon hīe
 of·wundrode þæs wulfes hierd·rædenne, and þæt hālgē hēafod
 hām feredon mid him, þanciende þām Ælmihtigan ealra his
 wundra. Ac se wulf folgode forþ mid þām hēafde, oþ þæt hīe
 tō tūne cōmon, swelce hē tam wære, and ge·wende eft sippan
 135 tō wuda on·gēan.

Þā landlēode þā sippan leġdon þæt hēafod tō þām hālgan
 bodige, and be·byriġdon hine swā hīe sēlest mihton on swelcre
 hrædinge, and cīrican ā·rærdon sōna him on·uppan. Eft þā
 on fierste, æfter fela ġearum, þā sēo hergung ge·swāc, and sibb

wearþ for·giefen þæm ge·swenctan folce, þā fēngon hīe tō·gædre 140
 and worhton āne cīrican weorþlice þæm hālgan, for þæm þe
 ge·lōme wundru wurdon æt his byrgenne, æt þæm ge·bed-
 hūse þær hē be·byrged wæs. Hīe woldon þā ferian mid folcli-
 cum weorþ·mynde þone hālgan lichaman, and lecgan innan
 þære cīrican. Þā wæs micel wundor þæt hē wæs eall swā ge·hāl 145
 swelce hē cwic wære, mid clænum lichaman, and his swēora
 wæs ge·hālod, þe ær wæs for·slægen, and wæs swelce ān seolcen
 þræd ymbe his swēoran rēad, mannum tō sweotolunge hū hē
 of·slægen wæs. Ēac swelce þā wunda, þe þā wælhreowan hæp-
 nan mid ge·lōmum scotungum on his liče macodon, wæron 150
 ge·hælde þurh þone heofonlican God; and he līp swā ansund
 oþ þisne andweardan dæg, andbīdiende æristes and þæs ēcan
 wuldres. His lichama ūs cýþþ, þe līp unfor·molsnod, þæt hē
 būtan for·ligre hēr on worulde leofode, and mid clænum life
 tō Criste sīpode. 155

Sum widewe wunode, Ōswyn ge·hāten, æt þæs hālgan byr-
 genne, on ge·bedum and fastennum manigu gēar sīþpan. Sēo
 wolde efsian ælce gēare þone sanct, and his næglas ceorfan
 sýferlice mid lufe, and on scrīne healdan tō hālig·dōme on
 wēofode. Þā weorþode þæt landfolc mid ge·lēafan þone sanct, 160
 and þeodred biscop þearle mid giefum on golde and on seolfre,
 þæm sancte tō weorþmynde.

Þā cōmon on sumne sæl ungesælge þeofas eahta on ānre
 nihte tō þæm ār·weorþan hālgan: woldon stelan þā mǣpmas
 þe menn þider brōhton, and cunnodon mid cræfte hū hīe inn 165
 cuman mihten. Sum slōg mid slecge swīpe þā hæpsan, sum
 hiera mid fēolan fēolode ymb·ūtan, sum ēac under·dealf þā
 duru mid spade, sum hiera mid hlædre wolde on·lūcan þæt
 ēag·þýrel; ac hīe swuncon on idel, and earmlice fērdon, swā
 þæt se hāлга wer hīe wundorlice ge·band, ælcne swā hē stōd 170
 strūtiende mid tōle, þæt hiera nān ne mihte þæt morþ ge-
 fremman ne hīe þanon ā·styrian; ac stōdon swā oþ mergen.
 Menn þā þæs wundrodon, hū þā weargas hangodon, sum on
 hlædre, sum lēat tō ge·delfe, and ælc on his weorce wæs fæste
 ge·bunden. Hīe wurdon þā ge·brōhte tō þæm biscope ealle, 175

and hē hēt hīe hōn on hēam ġealgum ealle; ac hē næs nā
 ġe-myndiġ hū se mild-heorta God clipode þurh his witegan
 þās word þe hēr standap: *Eos qui ducuntur ad mortem eruere ne*
cesses, 'Þā þe man lætt tō dēaþe ā-lies hīe ūt simle.' And ēac
 180 þā hālgan canōnas ġe-hādodum for-bēoðap, ġe biscopum ġe
 prēostum, tō bēonne ymbe þeofas, for þām þe hit ne ġe-byreþ
 þām þe bēoþ ġe-corene Gode tō þegnienne þæt hīe ġe-þwār-
 lācan scylen on ænges mannes dēaþe, ġif hīe bēoþ Dryhtnes
 þēgnas. Eft þā Þeodred biscop scēawode his bēc, hē siþþan
 185 be-hrēowsode mid ġeōmrunge þæt hē swā rēþne dōm sette
 þām unġesælgum þeofum, and hit be-sārgode æfre oþ his lifes
 ende, and þā lēode bæd ġeorne þæt hīe him mid fæsten fulliçe
 þrie dagas, biddende þone Ælmihtigan þæt hē him ārian
 scolde.

190 On þām lande wæs sum mann, Lēofstān ġe-hāten, riçe for
 worulde and unwittiġ for Gode. Sē rād tō þām hālgan mid
 riçetere swiþe, and hēt him æt-ēowian orgelliçe swiþe þone
 hālgan sanct, hwæþer hē ġe-sund wære; ac swā hraþe swā hē
 ġe-seah þæs sanctes lichaman, þā ƿ-wēdde hē sōna, and wæl-
 195 hrēowlice grymetode, and earmlice ġe-endode yflum dēaþe.
 Þis is þām ġe-līc þe se ġe-lēaffulla pāpa Gregōrius sægde on his
 ġe-setnesse be þām hālgan Laurentie, þe liþ on Rōme-byriġ,
 þæt menn woldon scēawian simle hū hē lāġe, ġe gōde ġe yfle;
 ac God hīe ġe-stilde swā þæt þær swulton on þære scēawunge
 200 āne seofon menn æt-gædre. Þā ġe-swicon þā oþre tō scēawienne
 þone martyr mid menniscum ġe-dwyldre.

Fela wundra we ġe-hiērdon on folclīcre sprāce be þām
 hālgan Ēadmunde, þe wē hēr nyllaþ on ġe-write settan, ac hīe
 wāt ġe-hwā. On þissum hālgan is sweotol, and on swelcum
 205 oþrum, þæt God ælmihtiġ mæg þone mann ā-ræran eft on
 dōmes dæg ansundne of eorþan, sē þe hielt Ēadmunde hālne
 his lichaman oþ þone miclan dæg, þeah þe hē of moldan cōme.
 Wierþe is sēo stōw for þām weorþfullan hālgan þæt hīe man
 weorþiġe and wel ġe-lōgiġe mid clānum Godes þēowum tō
 210 Crīstes þēow-dōme; for þām þe se hālga is mærra þonne menn
 magon ā-smēagan. Nis Angel-cynn be-dæled Dryhtnes hāl-

gena, þonne on Engla-lande licgaþ swelce hālgan swelce þes
hālgā cyning, and Cūpberht se ēadiga, and sancte Æpelþrȳp
on Ælig, and ēac hiere sweostor, ansunde on lichaman, ge·lēafan
tō trymminge. Sind ēac fela ȳpre on Angelcynne hālgan, þe 215
fela wundra wyrcaþ, swā swā hit wīde is cūþ, þāem Ælmihtigan
tō lofe, þe hīe on ge·lēfdon. Crīst ge·sweotolaþ mannum þurh
his mæran hālgan þæt hē is ælmihtig God þe macaþ swelc
wundru, þēah þe þā carman lūdēi hine eallunga wip·sōcen,
for þāem þe hīe sind ā·wiergde, swā swā hīe wyscton him selfum. 220
Ne bēoþ nān wundru ge·worht æt hiera byrgennum, for þāem
þe hīe ne ge·lēfaþ on þone lifiendan Crīst; ac Crīst ge·sweotolaþ
mannum hwār se sōþa ge·lēafa is, þonne hē swelc wundru
wyrcaþ þurh his hālgan wīde geond þās eorþan. Þæs him sīe
wuldor ā mid his heofonlican Fæder and þāem Hālgan Gāste, 225
ā būtan ende. Amen.

VII

FROM THE OLD ENGLISH TRANSLATION OF BEDE'S *ECCLESIASTICAL HISTORY*

A. A DESCRIPTION OF BRITAIN

Breten is gār-secgas iēg-land, þæt wæs ġeo ġeāra Albion hāten :
is ġe-sett be-twix norþ-dæle and west-dæle, Germānie and
Gallie and Hispānie, þām mǣstum dælum Eurōpe, micle fæce
on-ġean. Þæt is norþ eahta hund mīla lang, and twā hund mīla
5 brād. Hit hæfþ fram sūþ-dæle þā mǣġþe on-ġean þe man hǣtt
Gallia Belgica. Hit is welig, þis iēgland, on wæstmum and on
trēowum missenlicra cynna, and hit is ġe-scrēpe on lāswe
scēapa and nēata, and on sumum stōwum win-ġeardas grōwaþ.
Swelce ēac þeos eorþe is berende missenlicra fugla and sǣ-
10 wihta, and fisc-wiellum wæterum and wiell-ġe-springum;
and hēr bēoþ oft fangene sēolas and hranas and mere-swīn, and
hēr bēoþ oft numene missenlicra cynna weoloc-sciella and
musculan, and on þām bēoþ oft ġe-mētte þā betstan mere-
grotan ælces hiwes. And hēr bēoþ swīpe ġe-nyhtsume weolocas,
15 of þām biþ ġe-worht se weoloc-rēada telg, þone ne mǣġ ne sunne
blǣcan, ne ne reġen wierdan; ac swā hē biþ ieldra, swā hē
fægerra biþ. Hit hæfþ ēac, þis land, sealt-sēapas, and hit hæfþ
hāt wæter, and hāt baþu, ælcra ieldu and hāde þurh tō-dǣleda
stōwa ġe-scrēpe. Swelce hit is ēac berende on wegga ōrum,
20 āres and isernes, lēades and seolfres.

Wæs þis iēgland ēac ġeo ġe-weorþod mid þām æpelestum
ceastrum, ānes wana þrītigum, þā þe wāron mid weallum and
torrum and gatum and þām trumestum locum ġe-timbrode,
būtan ōprum lāssum ceastrum unrīm. And for þām þe þis
25 iēgland under þām selfan norþdæle middan-ġeardes nīcst līþ,
lēohta niht on sumera hæfþ; swā þæt oft on midre nihte ġe-flit
cymþ þām be-healdendum, hwæper hit sīe þe æfen-glōmung
þe on morgen dagung : is on þām sweotol þæt þis iēgland hæfþ

micle lengran dagas on sumera, and swā ēac niht on wintra,
þonne þā sūpðælas middangeardes.

30

On fruman ærest wāron pisses ieglandes bī-gengan Brettas
āne, fram þām hit naman on-fēng. Is þæt sægd þæt hīe cōmon
fram Armoricāno þære mægþe on Bretene, and þā sūpðælas
pissas ieglandes him ge-sæton and ge-agnodon.

Þā ge-lamp æfter þām þæt Peohta þeod cōm of Scipia-lande 35
on scipum, and þā ymb;ærndon eall Bretene ge-māru, þæt hīe
cōmon on Scotland ūp, and þær ge-metton Scotta þeode, and
him bādon setles and eardung-stōwe on hiera lande be-twix
him. Andswarodon Scottas þæt hiera land ne wāren tō þas
mīcel þæt hīe mihten twā þeoda ge-habban; ac cwædon: 'Wē 40
magon ēow sellan hālwende ge-þeahte hwæt gē dōn magon.
Wē witon heonan nāht feorr ōper iegland east-rihte, þæt wē
magon oft lēohtum dagum ge-sēon. Gif gē þæt sēcan willaþ,
þonne magon gē þær eardungstowe habban, oþþe gif hwelc
ēow wiþ-stent, þonne ge-fultumiaþ wē ēow.' Þā ferdon Peohtas 45
in Bretene, and on-gunnon eardian þā norþðælas pissas ieg-
landes, and Brettas, swā wē ær cwædon, þā sūpðælas. Mid þy
Peohtas wif næfdon, bādon him fram Scottum. Þā ge-þafodon
hīe þære ārædnesse, and him wif sealdon, þæt þær sēo wīse on
twēon cume, þæt hīe þonne mā of þām wif-cynne him cyning 50
curen þonne of þām wæpned-cynne, þæt giet tō-dæg is mid
Peohtum healden.

Þā, forþ-gangenre tide, æfter Brettum and Peohtum, pridde
cynn Scotta Bretene on-fēng on Peohta dæle, þā wæron cumene
of Hibernia, Scotta ieglande, mid hiera here-togan, Readas 55
hätte; oþþe mid frēond-scipe oþþe mid ge-feohte him selfum
be-twix hīe setl and eardungstōwe ge-agnodon, þā hīe nū giet
habbaþ. Þæt cynn nū geond tō-dæg Dalreadingas wæron
hātene.

Hibernia, Scotta iegland, ge on brædu his stealles, ge on 60
hālwendnesse, ge on smyltnesse lyfta, is betere micle þonne
Bretene land; swā þæt þær seldan snāw leng līþ þonne þrie
dagas. And þær nānig mann for wintres ciele on sumera hīeg
ne mæwþ, ne scypenne līs nēatum ne timbraþ; ne þær man

- 65 ænigne snicendne wyrm ne ætrenne ne ge·siehp, ne þær ænig
 nædre libban ne mæg. Is þæt iegland welig on meolcum and
 on hunige, and wingearðas weaxaþ on sumum stōwum, and
 hit is fiscwielle and fugolwielle, and mære on huntunge heorota
 and rāna.
- 70 Wæs Bretene iegland Rōmānum uncūp oþ þæt Gāius se
 cāsere, oþre naman Iūlius, hit mid fierde ge·sōhte and ge·eode
 siextigum wintra ær Cristes cyme.

B. THE CONVERSION OF NORTHUMBRIA

- þā se cyning þās word ge·hīerde, þā andswarode hē him, and
 cwæp þæt hē ægþer ge wolde ge scolde þām ge·lēafan on·fōn
 75 þe hē lārde. Cwæp hwæpre þæt hē wolde mid his frēondum
 and mid his ealdormannum and mid his witum spræce habban
 and ge·peaht, gif hie þæt þafian wolden þæt hie ealle æt·samne
 on lifes wielle Criste ge·hālgode wāren. Þā dyde se cyning
 swā he cwæp, and se biscop þæt ge·þafode. Þā hæfde hē spræce
 80 and ge·peaht mid his witum, and' synderlice wæs fram him
 eallum frignende hwelc him þūhte and ge·sewen wære þeos
 niwe lār and þære god·cundnesse bi·gang þe þær lāred wæs.

- Him þā andswarode his ealdor·biscop, Cēfi wæs hāten:
 'Ge·seoh þū, cyning, hwelc þeos lār sīe, þe ūs nū bodod is.
 85 Ic þē sōpliçe andette þæt ic cūpliçe ge·leornod hæbbe, þæt
 eallunga nāwiht mægenes ne nytnesse hæfþ sēo æ·fæstnes þe
 wē oþ þis hæfdon and be·eodon. For þām nān þinra þegna
 nēodlicor ne ge·lust·fullicor hine ge·þeodde on ūra goda bi·
 gangum þonne ic; and þeah manige sindon þe mārān giefā and
 90 frem·fulnessa æt þē on·fēngon þonne ic, and on eallum þingum
 mārān ge·syntu hæfdon. Hwæt ic wāt, gif ūre godu ænge miht
 hæfdon, þonne wolden hie mē bet fultumian, for þām ic him
 geornlicor þeodde and hīerde. For þām mē þyncþ wislic, gif
 þū ge·sēo þā þing beorhtran and strengran þe ūs niwan bodod
 95 sindon, þæt wē þām on·fōn.'

þā þæs cyninges wita oþer and his ealdormann ge·þafunge
 sealde, and tō þære spræce fēng and þus cwæp: 'Pyllic mē is

ge·sewen, cyning lēofosta, þis andwearde lif manna on eorþan
 .tō wiþ·metennesse þære tide þe ūs uncūþ is, swelce þū æt
 swæsendum sitte mid þīnum ealdormannum and þegnum on 100
 winter-tide, and sīe fȳr on·æled and þīn heall ge·wiermed, and
 hit rīne and snīwe and hagolīge; and ān spearwa þanon ūtane
 cume and hrædlice þā healle þurh-flēoge, and cume þurh ōþre
 duru inn, þurh ōþre ūt ge·wite. Hwæt hē, on þā tid þe hē inne
 biþ, ne biþ hrinen mid þȳ storme þæs wintres; ac þæt biþ ān 105
 ēagan-bearhtm and þæt læste fæc, ac hē sōna of wintre on
 winter eft cymþ. Swa þonne þis manna lif tō med-miclum
 fæce æt·iewþ; hwæt þær-be-foran gange, and hwæt þær-æfter
 fylge, wē ne cunnon. For þām gif þeos nīwe lār ā-wiht cūplicre
 and ge·wisslicre bringe, þæs wierþe hēo is þæt wē þære fylgen.' 110
 Þissum wordum ge·licum ōþre ealdormenn and þæs cyninges
 ge·peahteras spræcon.

Þā wæs se cyning openlice andettende þām biscope and him
 eallum þæt he wolde fæstlice þām dēofol-gieldum wiþ·sacan,
 and Cristes ge·lēafan on·fōn.

VIII

FROM 'ALEXANDER'S LETTER TO
ARISTOTLE'

Hēt ic þā ælcne mann hine mid his wāpnum ge·gierwan and
 faran forþ, and þæt ēac fæstlice be·bēad þæt sē mann sē ne
 wære mid his wāpnum æfter fierd-wisan ge·giered þæt hine
 man scolde mid wāpnum ā·cwellan. Þā wundrodon hie swiþe
 5 for hwon hīc þā hefignesse and miçelnesse þāra wāpna in swā
 miclum þurste beran scolden, þær nānig fēond ne æt·iewde;
 ac ic wiste hwæpre þæt ūre fōr and sīþ-fæt wæs þurh þā land
 and stōwa þe missenlicra cynna cardung in wæs nādreana and
 rīfra wildēora, and wē, þe þæs landes unglēawe and unwise
 10 wæron, þæt ūs þonne semninga hwelc earfoþe on be·cōme.

Fērdon wē þā forþ be þære ēa ōfre. Þā wæs sēo eahtoþe
 tid dægēs, þā cōmon wē tō sumre byrig. Sēo burg wæs on
 midre þære ēa in ānum ieg-lande ge·timbrod. Wæs sēo burg
 mid þy hrōde and trēow-cynne þe on þære ēa ōfre wēox, and
 15 wē ær bī writon and sægdon, ā·sett and ge·worht. Þā ge·sāwon
 wē in þære byrig and on·gēaton mennisce menn fēa healf-
 nacode eardiende. Þā hie þā ūs ge·sāwon, hie selfe sōna in hiera
 hūsum diægollīce hie miþon. Þā wilnode ic þāra manna ansiene
 tō ge·sēonne, þæt hie ūs fersc wæter and swēte ge·tāhten.

20 Mid þy wē þā lange bidon and ūs nānig mann tō wolde,
 þā hēt ic fēa strāla sendan in þā burg innan, tō þon, gif hie
 hiera willum ūs tō noldon, þæt hie for þām ege þæs ge·feohtes
 nīede scolden. Þā wæron hie þy swiþor ā·fyrhte, and hie fæstor
 hýddon. Þā hēt ic twā hund minra þegna of Grēca herige
 25 leohtum wāpnum hie ge·gierwan, and hie on sunde tō þære
 byrig fōren and swummen ofer æfter þære ēa tō þām ieglande.
 Þā hie þā hæfdon fēorþan dæl þære ēa ge·swummen, þā be·cōm
 sum angrislicu wīse on hie. Þæt wæs þonne nicora menigū,
 on ansiene māran and unhierlicran þonne þā elpendas, in þone
 30 grund þære ēa and be·twix þā yþa þæs wāteres þā menn

be-sencte, and mid hiera mūpe hie sliton and blōdgodon, and hie ealle swā for-nāmon þæt ure nānig wiste hwær hiera ænig cōm.

Þā wæs ic swīpe ierre þām mīnum lād-þēowum þā ūs on swelce frēcennessa ge-læddon; hēt hiera þā be-scūfan in þā ēa 35
 oþer healf hund, and sōna þæs þe hie inne wæron, swā wæron þā nicoras gearwe. Tō-brugdon hie swā hie þā oþre ær dydon; and swā picce hie in þære ēa a-wēollon swā æmettan, þā nicoras, and swelc unrīm hiera wæs. Þā hēt ic blāwan mīne biēman and þā fierd faran. 40

Sippan wē þā þanon ferdon, þā wæs hit on seofon nihta fæce þæt wē tō þām lande and tō þære stōwe be-cōmon þær Porrus se cyning mid his fierde wicode; and hē swīpe þæs landes fæstenum trēowode þonne his ge-feohte and ge-winne.

Þā wilnode hē þæt hē mē cūpe and mīne þeǵnas. Þā hē þæs 45
 frægn and āscode fram þām fērendum mīnra wic-stōwa, þā wæs þæt mē ge-sægd þæt hē wilnode mē tō cunnenne and mīn werod. Þā a-leǵde ic mīnne cyne-gierelan, and mē mid uncūpe hrægle and mid lȳperlice gierelan mē ge-gierede, swelce ic wære hwelc folclīc mann and mē wære metes and wīnes þearf. 50
 Þā ic wæs in þām wicum Porres, swā ic ær sægde. Þā sōna swā hē mē þær ge-āscode, and him man sægde þæt þær man cumen wæs of Alexandres here-wicum, þā hēt hē mē sōna tō him lētan.

Mid þȳ ic þā wæs tō him ge-lædd, þā frægn hē mē and 55
 āscode hwæt Alexander se cyning dyde, and hū-līc mann hē wære, and in hwelcre ieldu. Þā bismrode ic hine mid mīnum andswarum and him sægde þæt hē for-ealdod wære, and tō þæs eald wære þæt hē ne mihte elcor ge-wearmian būtan æt fȳre and æt glēdum. Þā wæs hē sōna swīpe glæd and ge-fēonde 60
 þāra mīnra andswara and worda, for þon ic him sægde þæt hē swā for-ealdod wære, and þā cwæp hē ēac: 'Hū mæg hē, lā, ænge ge-winne wip mē spōwan, swā for-ealdod mann? For þon ic eom mē self geong and hwæt!' Þā hē þā geornlicor mē frægn be his þingum, þā sægde ic þæt ic his þinga fela ne 65

cūpe, and hine seldan ge·sāwe, þone cyning, for þām þe ic
wære his þegnes mann and his cēapes hierde and wære his
feoh-bigenga. Þā hē þās word ge·hīerde, þā sealde mē ān ge·writ
and āne epistolan, and mē bæd þæt ic hine Alexandre þām
70 cyninge ā·gēafe, and mē ēac mēde ge·hēt gif ic hit him ā·giefan
wolde; and ic him ge·hēt þæt ic swā dōn wolde swā hē mē bæd.

Þā ic þā þanon ge·witen wæs, and eft cōm tō mīnum here-
wicum, þā ægþer ge ær þon þe ic þæt ge·writ rædde, ge ēac
æfter þām, ic wæs swīpe mid hleahtre on·styred. Hæfde ic þā
75 þæs cyninges wīc and his fæstennu ge·scēawod þe hē mid his
fierde in ge·faren hæfde.

IX

MEDICINAL RECIPES

A

Ðeos wyr̥t, þe man betonican nemneð, heo biþ cenned on mæd-
um and on clænum dūnlandum and on gefriþedum stōwum.
Sēo dēah gehwæper ge þæs mannes sāwle ge his lichoman.
Hio hyne scyldeþ wið unhȳrum nihtgengum and wið egeslicum
gesihðum and swefnum; and sēo wyr̥t byþ swȳpe hāligu. And 5
þus þū hī scealt niman on Agustes mōnðe būtan iserne; and
þonne þū hī genumene hæbbe, āhryse þā moldan of, þæt hyre
nānwiht on ne clyfie, and þonne driȳ hī on sceade swȳpe þearle,
and mid wyr̥ttruman mid ealle ġewyr̥c tō dūste. Brūc hyre
þonne, and hyre byriȳ þonne ðū beþurfe. 10

Ġif þæannes hēafod tōbrocen sȳ, ġenim þā ylcan wyr̥te be-
tonican, scearfa hȳ þonne and ġnīd swȳpe smale tō dūste.
Ġenim þonne twēga trymessā wæȳge, þiȳe hit þonne on hātum
bēore. Þonne hālað þæt hēafod swȳðe hraðe æfter þām drince.

Wið ēagena sār, ġenim þære ylcan wyr̥te wyr̥ttruman, sēoð 15
on wætere tō þridan dæle, and of þām wætere beþa þā ēagan;
and ġenim þære sylfan wyr̥te lēaf and brȳt hȳ, and leȳe ofer
þā ēagan on þone andwlitan.

Wið ēarena sār, ġenim þære ylcan wyr̥te lēaf þonne heo
ġrēnosȳ bēo, wyl on wætere and wring þæt wōs, and sippan 20
hyt gestanden bēo, dō hit eft wearm and þurh wulle drype on
þæt ēare.

B

Wið þā blegene, ġenim nigon æȳra and sēoð hiȳ fæste, and
nim þā ġeolcan and dō þæt hwīte aweȳ; and mera ðā ġeolcan
on ānre pannan and wring þæt wōs ut þurh ænne clāð. And 25
nim eall swā fela dropena wīnes swā ðāra æȳra bēo, and eall
swā fela dropena unhālgodes eles, and eall swā fela huniges
dropena; and of finoles more eall swā fela dropena ġenim
þonne, and ġedō hit eall tōsomne and wring ūt þurh ænne
clāð, and syle þām menn etan. Him byð sōna sēl. 30

NOTES

References are to sections of the Grammar

I. FROM THE GOSPEL OF ST. MATTHEW

The text is based on MS. Corpus Christi College Cambridge, 140, edited by W. W. Skeat, *The Holy Gospels in Anglo-Saxon . . .* (Cambridge, 1871-87).

1. **ælc þāra þe**. For other examples of the 'partitive genitive' see § 86. **þās mīn word**. § 89, end. **ge·hīerþ**. § 91, end. **þā**. § 47. **bīþ**. § 92.

2. **þām wisan were**. § 87 (1), end; § 89 (1). **sē**. § 50. **ofer stān**. § 96. **þā cōm**. § 100 (2).

4. **hit nā ne fēoll**. § 97.

7. **sē**. § 47.

8. **flōd** is here neuter plural, as shown by the form of the verb. It is often masculine.

11. **is ge·worden**. An over-literal rendering of the Latīn *factum est*.

12. **þā þā menn slēpon**. § 92.

14. **þā sēo wurt wēox**. § 100 (3).

15. **hine** is reflexive. § 45.

16. **ne sēowe þū**. § 98.

17. **hē** is masculine in agreement with the gender of *æcer*. § 84.

18. **unhold mann**. § 90.

18-19. **gāþ, gadriap**. The construction is irregular. Normal usage would require a *þæt*-clause with subjunctive—§ 94, B (2). This rendering is paratactic, lit. 'Do you wish? Shall we go and gather . . .?' **hie** pl., inconsistently with the context.

20. **ā·wyrtwalien**. § 94, B (4).

21. **secge**. The sense is future. § 92.

23. **tō for·bærnenne**. § 95. Out of such active forms ('in order to burn it') developed the passive sense ('in order that it may be burnt') as in Mn.E. 'a house to let'.

25. **hund scēapa**. § 40. **ān of þām**. *of*, lit. 'from', is often used in this partitive sense. Sometimes *of* alone implies 'some of', as l. 69 of *ēowrum ele* 'some of your oil'.

28. **ge·limpþ, fint**. The verbs in the *gif*-clause and the clause dependent on it are indicative instead of subjunctive, because the event is not considered unreal. § 94, B (8), end.

32-3. **ge·wordenre ge·cwidrædenne**. A very stiff imitation of the ablative absolute of the original: *conuentione autem facta cum operariis*—§ 87 (2); **þām wyrhtum** is dative of the person affected—§ 87 (1).

36. *gā gē*. § 56; so also *stande gē* l. 40.
 37. *þæt*, 'that which'. § 50.
 38. *dyde þām swā gēlice*. The Latin has simply *fecit similiter*. The sense is 'did like to that' (i.e. like his former proceeding), the *swā* being pleonastic.
 39. *funde* is the usual preterite of *findan*, abnormal in being a weak form when the rest of the verb is strong. § 64 (a).
 40. *ealne dæg*. § 85.
 41. *for þām þe*. § 96, end.
 43. *wæs . . . gēworden*. For periphrastic tenses with *wesan* see § 92.
 48. *scolden*. For this and other uses of tenses in this passage (*worhton* l. 50, *bēop* l. 57) see § 92.
 63. *ne nāmon nānne ele*. § 97.
 66. *man*. § 51.
 67. *him tō gēanes*. For the order see § 96.
 69. *of ēowrum ele*. See note to l. 25 above.
 72. *ēow*, 'for yourselves'. §§ 45, 87 (1).
 74. *æt nīehstan*, 'at last, finally' (at the point of time nearest the telling). This is the regular meaning of the phrase.
 75. *þā ōpre*. § 89, end.
 79. *sum mann*. § 90, end.
 84. *fife*. § 40.
 90. *cwæp tō him*. § 87 (2).
 91. *þū gōda þēow and gētrēowa*. § 100.
 94-5. *ic hæbbe gēstriened*. § 92. Though the form is more specific the sense does not differ from that of *gēstriende* l. 90.
 104-5. *be-fæste, nāme*. Cf. § 94, B (3, 8).
 106. *æt* commonly indicates the source *at* which something is sought, and so is used where Mn.E. would require *from*.
 108-9. *him þyncþ*. § 87 (1). *hæbbe* is subjunctive in what is virtually indirect speech, dependent on the verb 'seem'. § 94, B (1).

II. OLD TESTAMENT PIECES

A. is Genesis xxii in Ælfric's translation of the Heptateuch, MS. Cotton Claudius B. iv, edited by S. J. Crawford, *The Old English Heptateuch*, E.E.T.S. O.S. 160 (1921). B. and C. are from homilies by Ælfric, B. based on B.M. MS. Royal 7 C. xii, C. on MS. Bodley 342. They are edited from the Cambridge manuscript by B. Thorpe, *The Homilies of the Anglo-Saxon Church* (1844-6), i. 570 and ii. 432.

7. *on þone þriddan dæg*. § 96.
 8. *tō scoldon*. § 95, end.
 9. *ēow*. A pleonastic reflexive dative like *him* l. 42. § 87 (1).
 10. *unc* goes with *gēbiddenne*; *gēbiddan* in the sense 'say one's

prayers' is commonly accompanied by a reflexive pronoun, usually accusative.

14. **sīe.** § 94, B (1). **is** agrees with only the first part of the subject. § 91.

16. **him self.** § 45, end. In such constructions appears the origin of Mn.E. *himself*.

20. **wurde.** The subjunctive depends on the idea of intention in *wolde*.

25-6. **nū . . . nū.** These are correlative: 'now . . . now that', the second *nū* being virtually causal, 'since'.

29, 30. **ge·hæft.** § 83. **ā·hefde.** An occasional weak preterite of *-hebban*, which usually has *-hōf*. § 67.

36. **mīn ege.** *mīn* is 'objective genitive'. § 86. **māre,** neuter, 'a greater thing', 'something more important'.

37. **blētsige.** *blētsian*, earlier *blēdsian*, is derived from *blōd* 'blood' (with mutation of the root-vowel). It evidently meant originally 'sprinkle with blood', and so, in heathen times, 'consecrate' by sprinkling with the blood of a sacrificial victim. It was early adapted to Christian use, like a number of other words of heathen religious application, and usually translates *benedicere*.

51. **him tō handum.** § 87 (1).

55. **scolden.** Cf. § 94, end.

68. **þær.** § 99, end. **ær.** For this expression of pluperfect sense see § 92.

74. **hēt inn weorpan.** Cf. § 95.

86. **ā·ēode.** Impersonal verbs are often used thus, without expressed subject; but *hit* as subject is also frequent, as *hit ge·lamp* l. 84, and increases during the O.E. period.

94. **fram** here evidently means 'from', as commonly. It is also often used to indicate the agent in passive constructions.

96. **wite.** § 94, B (9).

108. **on his wip·metennesse.** § 86.

110. **wip·stande.** § 94, B (5).

113. **ge·ēacnod.** A feminine singular without ending. § 29 (a).

III. SAMSON

From Ælfric's paraphrase of the Book of Judges, in MS. Laud Misc. 509, ed. Crawford, *Heptateuch*.

1. **wæs eardiende.** Cf. § 92, end.

7. **ongīnþ tō āliesenne** means virtually 'will liberate'; *onginnan* is often used pleonastically in this way. See also § 95.

30. **āsende drincan.** After verbs of giving and the like this use of the infinitive of verbs of eating and drinking, with no object expressed, is regular.

35. **Gaza gehāten.** § 83.

- 40-1. *swā swā hīe belocenu wæron*, 'locked as they were'.
41. *tō ufewardum þām cnolle*, 'to the upper part of the summit', so 'to the top of the hill'. § 82, under *-ward*.
42. *gesihpum*. The use of singular or plural in expressing possessions or characteristics of a number of individuals often differs from Mn.E. idiom. Contrast VI, 64 note.
45. *wæs*, 'consisted'. For the mood see § 94, B (1).
50. *geworhte*. § 83. The dative *geworhtum*, agreeing with *rāpum*, would be regular. Perhaps the nominative is due to confusion with a relative construction: *þg of sinum geworhte sind*.
- 59-60. *hēo lēt þā swā*, 'she let it rest there'.
68. *tō langre fierste*. *fierst* is usually masculine (e.g. I, 87: *æfter miclum fierste*) but here feminine, as German *Frist*.
71. *swelce*, 'on the ground that', 'because (as they said)'.
75. *blīpost*. § 83, end. *hīe sūme*. § 86.
77. *hēton*. The plural is loosely used with reference to an obviously plural subject, though a singular verb, parallel with *gefette*, would be correct; cf. § 91.
82. *forþ* is commonly used to strengthen *mid* in this way: 'along with (them)'. *mā*, the comparative adverb, is used as a noun-equivalent to mean 'more in number'.

IV. FROM THE CHRONICLE

The text is based on the Parker manuscript, ed. Plummer and Earle, *Two of the Saxon Chronicles Parallel* (Oxford, 1892). For a discussion of the early entries see F. M. Stenton, *Anglo-Saxon England* (Oxford, 1943), pp. 15 ff.

1. *Hēr* is the usual opening of each annal. It means 'at this point in the series', so virtually 'at this date'.

3. *Wyr̥tgeorn* is the regular development of an earlier O.E. **Wurtigern* adapted from the British *Uortigern*.

4. *Ypwinesflēot* is apparently Ebbsfleet in Thanet.

8. *Angle*, dative singular of the noun *Angel*, the continental home of the Angles, probably essentially the same as Angeln, a district of modern Schleswig. *hēton him sendan*. *him* is reflexive: 'ordered a greater force to be sent to them'.

9. *Bret-wēala*. The second element, nom. sing. *Wealh*, meant 'foreigner', but acquired the special sense of 'Briton'.

14. on *West-seaxum*. Cf. § 27.

20. *Æglesprep* is thought to be an early, or alternative, name for Aylesford, Kent.

24. *Crecganford*, evidently Crayford.

32. *Cerdices-ōra* and *Cerdices-ford* l. 43 cannot be identified.

50. II. The modern form *Iona* arose from a misreading of the

adjective *Ioua* (*insula*); for details see Plummer, *Baedae Opera Historica*, ii. 127.

52. *seofon and hundseofontiġ*, though uninflected, is to be taken as agreeing with *wintra* as a genitive of description; cf. § 86.

58. *hwæt, þæt*. § 84.

64. *wære*. § 94, B (9). *þȳ . . . þȳ*. § 99.

66. *Ecgbryhting*. § 82.

68. *hǣpne menn*, Danes.

68-9. *mid Defena-scīre*, 'together with Devonshire', i.e. with the Devonshire *fierd*, the defence force in which all freemen were required to serve. *Wicganbeorg* is not certainly identified.

71. *dux* is written instead of *ealdormann*. So also *rex* sometimes occurs for *cyning*. *Sandwīc*, Sandwich.

74. *fēorþe healf hund*. § 41.

78. *Āclēa* would normally appear as *Oakley* in Mn.E., but the place is not identified.

80. *herlġe*. The Danish army is always so called in the Chronicle (not always elsewhere; cf. VI, 42, 80). The word *here*, presumably through its association with *herġian* 'harry', came to be applied only to a band of marauders. In the Laws, *here* is defined as a gang of thieves more than thirty-five in number. The English army is regularly called *fierd*, as ll. 76, 79.

83. *Norþ-wēalas*, the Welsh of Wales, as distinguished from the *West-wēalas* of Cornwall.

84. *gehīersumode*. The subject, *hē*, i.e. Burgred, is left unexpressed.

90. *Tenet, Thanet*.

94. *Scēap-īege*, Sheppey in Kent. The name means 'sheep island'.

102. *Wintanċeastre*, Winchester. The first element of the name is the Latinized British *Uenta* (*Belgarum*).

112. *Humbre-mūpan*, the mouth of the Humber.

113. *Eoforwīc*, York; an 'etymologizing' adaptation (*wīc* = 'dwelling') of the British name seen in the Latin form *Eboracum*.

114-15. *hæfdon . . . āworpenne*. § 92.

116. *þām* anticipates the following *þæt*-clause: 'they turned to (that, namely) fighting against the Danish army'; cf. § 99.

119. *inne wurdon*, 'got in'.

123. *Snotingahām*, Nottingham. *-hām* has no ending in the dative.

132. *Hrofesċeastre*, Rochester.

133. *And hīe . . .*, i.e. the citizens.

139. *Stūre*, the Stour in Essex.

146. *Sīgene*, the Seine.

V. PREFACES BY ÆLFRIC

A. from B.M. MS. Harley 107. J. Zupitza, *Ælfrics Grammatik und Glossar* (Berlin, 1880) follows MS. St. John's Coll. Oxford 154. B. excerpted from MS. Laud Misc. 509, ed. Crawford, *Heptateuch*.

Ælfric was educated at Winchester. He lived as a monk both there and at Cerne Abbas in Dorset, where he was master of the monastic school, before becoming abbot of Eynsham in 1005. The Grammar, and all his most important English works—homilies, lives of saints, translations from the Bible—were evidently written at Cerne between about 987 and 998.

1. *pās lýtlan bōc*, Priscian's grammar.

3. *hundeahatigum spellum*, Ælfric's two series of 'Catholic Homilies'.

11. *godspell*. The original form was evidently *gōd spell* 'good news', a translation of L. *bona adnuntiatio*, which in turn rendered Greek *euaggélion*. The first element was early confused with *gōd* 'God', and the compound understood as 'divine story'. See further the *Oxford English Dictionary* (O.E.D.) under *Gospel*.

26. *Dunstan* was Bishop of Worcester and London before becoming Archbishop of Canterbury in 960. *Æpelwold* in 963 became Bishop of Winchester, where Ælfric was his pupil. These two men, with Oswald, Bishop of Worcester, were the leading figures in the revival of Benedictine monasticism in England in the reign of Edgar.

33. *unwritere*. § 81, end.

35. *Æpelweard*, ealdormann of the western province of Wessex, was descended from the West Saxon royal house. He made a Latin version of the Anglo-Saxon Chronicle. Ælfric also dedicated to him his *Lives of Saints*.

36. *scolde*. § 94, end.

43. *ræðan gehierp*. § 95.

56-7. *hwæt lýtles*. *lýtles* is a partitive genitive depending on the indefinite *hwæt*, and the sense is 'any little thing'. This appears to be the first occurrence of the expression. It was idiomatic, and lasted for several centuries (see O.E.D. under *Little* B. 3. c. and *Little-what*).

62. *getācnode tōwearde*, 'signified as to come'.

VI. KING EDMUND

From B.M. MS. Cotton Julius E. vii, ed. Skeat, *Ælfric's Lives of Saints*, iv, E.E.T.S. O.S. 114 (1900).

This, like the other *Lives* and some other of Ælfric's works (e.g. the version of *Judges* from which III, *Samson*, is taken), is in alliterative prose; that is, the words are arranged in rhythmical groups bound together by alliteration after the manner of O.E. verse, but the range

of rhythms is less restricted than in verse. The alliteration and the movement are clearly discernible:

Ēadmund se ēadiga Ēastengla cýning
wæs smótor and wéorþfull and wéorþode síml
mid æþelum þéawum þone ælmihtigan Gód

1. *sancte* is an English modification of the Latin gen. *sancti*.

sancte Benedictes stówe, the monastery of Fleury-sur-Loire, so called because it claimed to possess the bones of St. Benedict, brought from their original burial-place at Monte Cassino. Fleury had much influence on the English Benedictine revival.

2-6. Edmund was killed in 869. Dunstan seems to have been born not later than 910, but the exact year is not known. He died in 988. Athelstan reigned from 924 to 939.

5. *sancte* here is the O.E. dative inflexion, *sanct* having been made into a noun.

31. *gewunnenum síge*. § 87 (2).

32-3. *ān and twentiġ ġēara*. § 86.

36. *bilewitan*. The second element is evidently the same as (*ge*)*witt*; the first seems to be from a root meaning 'good, mild', seen in German *billig*. See *O.E.D.* under *Bilewhit*.

43-5. *hætt hē þē dælan . . . and þū bēo*. Notice the change of construction.

64. *bedde*. O.E. sometimes uses a singular noun in this way when the number of individual possessors is plural, but each has only one of the things in question; cf. VIII, 31, *mid hiera mūþe*.

66. *flēames*. This construction of *wyrčan* with genitive is frequent.

69. *swelte ic, libbe ic*. § 94, B (8).

80. *fūse*. The plural is no doubt meant to refer to Hinguar and his men together.

96-7. *scuton . . . tō*. This *tō* is adverbial, 'at (him)'.

137. *swā hīe sēlest mihton*, 'as best they could', 'as well as they could'. This construction, with superlative adverb next the verb, is the normal way of expressing such a qualification.

156. *sum widewe*. § 29 (a).

169-70. *swā þæt* here does not denote result, but is explanatory, 'in that'.

171. *strūtiende*. The sense of *strūtian* is not certain. From Abbo's Latin *in ipso conamine* it would seem to be something like 'struggle', which is a meaning of related forms in German dialects. See *O.E.D.* under *Strut*, v.

172. *hīe* is reflexive, as if the subject were plural.

173. *þæs* anticipates the *hū*-clause.

178. The reference is apparently to Proverbs xxiv. 11, the Vulgate text of which is *Erue eos qui ducuntur ad mortem*.

193. *hwæþer*, '(that he might see) whether . . . '.

199. **swā þæt** is used as in l. 169-70.
 206. **Ēadmund** is to be taken as 'dative of interest': 'who keeps Edmund's body whole'. See also § 94, B (7).
 213. **Cūþberht**, the celebrated saint of Lindisfarne, went there from Melrose in 664, was consecrated bishop in 685, and died in 687.
 214. **Ēlig, Ely. hiere sweostor**, Seaxburg, who succeeded Æpel-prȳp as abbess of Ely, apparently in 679. They were daughters of Anna, king of the East Angles. **sancte**, a modification of *sancta*.

VII. THE O.E.⁹ TRANSLATION OF BEDE'S ECCLESIASTICAL HISTORY

A. is based on Cambridge University Library MS. Kk. 3. 18, B. on C.C.C. Cambridge MS. 41, both ed. J. Schipper in Grein's *Prosa* (Leipzig, 1897). A. is edited also by T. Miller, E.E.T.S. O.S. 95 (1890).

Bede finished his *Historia Ecclesiastica Gentis Anglorum* in 731. The O.E. translation was evidently made in Alfred's reign, probably under his auspices. Whether he himself wrote it is very doubtful.

3. **micle fæce**. An instrumental of 'measure of difference'.
 4. **eahta hund . . . twā hund**. § 85.
 9-10. **berende missenlicra fugla and . . . wæterum**. A confused and unidiomatic rendering of the Latin: . . . *auium ferax terra marique generis diuersi; fluuiis quoque multum piscosis ac fontibus praeclara copiosis*.
 13. **meregrotan**. The word is taken from Latin (from Greek) *margarita*; but, by 'popular etymology', it has been modified by association with O.E. *mere* 'sea' and *grot* 'grain'.
 22. **ānes wana þritigum**, 'thirty less one'. In such expressions (which are not frequent and are confined to the tens less one) *wana* is an indeclinable adjective.
 24. **unrīm** is to be taken as in apposition to *ceastrum*. It is occasionally left undeclined in this way.
 33. **Armoricanō** is taken directly from the Latin *de tractu Armoricanō*, i.e. Armorica, Brittany.
 38. **him reflexive**, 'for themselves'. **setles**. § 86.
 49. **þære ārædnesse**, 'on this condition', looking forward to the following *þæt*-clause.
 66. **meolcum**. This strange use of the plural form in the dative of *meolc* is not uncommon.
 74. **ge wolde ge scolde**, 'it was both his desire and his duty'.
 77. **gif**, '(to find out) whether'.
 80-1. **wæs . . . frignende** is an attempt to render the Latin *sciscitabatur*. **gesewen wære**, another Latinism = *uideretur*.
 110. **þæs . . . þæt** correlative.

VIII. FROM 'ALEXANDER'S LETTER'

'The Letter of Alexander the Great to Aristotle', which purports to give Alexander's own account of his adventures in the East, is a romantic fiction, composed in Alexandrian Greek, translated into Latin and widely known in the Middle Ages. It was evidently translated into O.E. in the tenth century, and copied into MS. Cotton Vitellius A. xv, where it immediately precedes *Beowulf*. Its style is flat and ungraceful, disfigured especially by the frequent use of pairs of near-synonyms to render a single Latin word; but it is valuable as a specimen of an early 'traveller's tale', showing an aspect of the literary interests of the Anglo-Saxons very little represented in surviving manuscripts. The latest edition is by S. Rypins, in E.E.T.S. O.S. 161 (1924).

2-3. *sē mann . . . þæt hine*. This kind of anacoluthon is frequent in this text; cf. ll. 9-10 *wē . . . þæt ūs*.

29. *māran . . . unhierlicran*. Regular syntax would require a genitive plural agreeing with *micora*; but the nominative corresponds to *menigū*, and the plural to the idea of multitude.

36. *ðær healf hund*. Cf. § 41.

43-4. *swiþe . . . þonne*. *swiþe* may be no more than a slip for *swiþor* (Latin *magis quam praelio*). But such constructions are not unknown elsewhere (esp. *Beowulf*, ll. 69-70), and perhaps the comparative idea is simply to be understood.

64. *mē self*. The construction is the same as that in II, 16, but has become virtually a compound simply emphasizing the subject.

68-9. *gewrit . . . epistolan*. A particularly confusing use of English and Latin synonyms for the same thing.

IX. MEDICINAL RECIPES

A. from MS. Cotton Vitellius C. iii (first half of the eleventh century), B. from Titus D. xxvi (somewhat later). Both are edited in Cockayne's *Leechdoms . . .* (Rolls Series, 1864), i. 70 and 380.

The spelling of these two extracts has been left as it is in the manuscripts, in order to illustrate some of the characteristic features which distinguish the later language from the early West Saxon which is taken as the basis of the grammar in this book, and to which the other texts have been made to conform.

The most important difference lies in the use of *ȝ* instead of

- (a) *ȝe* in *scyldeþ*, *unhȝrum* 4, *hyre* 7, 9, 10, *byriȝ* 10, *sȝ* 11, *hȝ* 12, &c., *wyl* 20;
- (b) *ȝ*, especially after *w* in *swȝþe* 5, 8, &c., and in words generally unstressed, as *hyne* 4, *hyt* 21, *byþ* 5, 30, but also in other positions, as *āhryse* 7, *clyfie* 8, *ylcan* 11, 19, *trymessa* 13;
- (c) *e* in the group *sel-*, as *sylfan* 17, *syle* 30.

Conversely, *i* appears for earlier *y* before the palatal consonant in *drīg* 8. Earlier *ie* has become *ī* in *hī* 6, 7, 8, and the same sound is represented by *hiğ* 23. *Hīo* 4 for *hēo* appears in early texts also.

Before nasal consonants, *o* appears instead of *a* in *lichoman* 3, *tosomme* 29.

The vowels of some cases of the definite article have been analogically redistributed, as *ḥām* 14 for *ḥāēm*, and conversely *ḍāra* 26 for *ḥāra*.

The accusative *ānne* 25, with mutated vowel, instead of *āne*, is frequent. In *aweg* 24 original *on-* in unstressed position has been weakened to *a-*; and in *āgra* 23 earlier *-u* has similarly become *-a*.

GLOSSARY

The order is alphabetical (*æ* following *ad*, *þ* following *t*), except that words with the prefix *ge-* are put in the order of the letter that follows the *ge-*: *ge-bed* under *b*, *un-ge-cynde* after *un-cūþ*, &c.

The prefix *ge-* of some words is italicized. This indicates that, in the texts in this book, forms either with or without the prefix may occur, with no distinction of meaning.

The following abbreviations are used:

m., f., n., masculine, feminine, neuter (*noun* is implied).

a., g., d., i., accusative, genitive, dative, instrumental.

sg., pl., singular, plural.

aj. adjective; *av.* adverb; *prn.* pronoun; *num.* numeral; *cj.* conjunction; *prp.* preposition; *w.* with (case).

cp. comparative; *sp.* superlative; *indecl.* indeclinable; *correl.* correlative.

v. verb; *sv.* strong verb; *vv.* weak verb; *ppv.* preterite-present verb.

pret. preterite; *pres. pt.* present participle; *p. pt.* past participle; *sbj.* subjunctive.

tr. transitive; *int.* intransitive; *rfl.* reflexive; *impers.* impersonal.

The numbers after *sv.*, *vv.* refer to the classes of the verbs in the Grammar.

Words in [] are Latin originals [L.] or cognate O.E. words.

A number at the end of an entry means that the word is treated in that section of the Grammar.

ā av. (for) ever.

abbod m. abbot [L. *abbatem*].

ā-bēodan sv. 2 *w. d.* announce.

ā-bītan sv. 1 devour.

ā-blendan sv. 1 blind.

ā-būgan sv. 2 bend, swerve, turn; submit.

āc f. oak.

ac cj. but; and.

ā-cennan sv. 1 bear (child).

ā-cōlian sv. 2 grow cold.

ā-cwellan sv. 1 kill.

ā-cwencan sv. 1 extinguish.

ā-drincan sv. 3 be drowned.

æ f. (*sg. indecl.*) law.

æcer m. field.

æ-fæst-nes f. religion.

æfen mn. evening.

æfen-glōmung f. twilight.

æfre av. ever, always.

æfter av., prp. w. d. after; according to, by; through.

æg n. (pl. ægru) egg. 26.

æg-hwelc prn. each.

ægþer prn. either, each; both; *cj. ægþer ge . . . ge* both . . . and [= *æg-hwæper*].

æht f. property [*āhte, āgan*]. 18.

ælc prn. aj. each, every, all. 51.

æl-mihtig aj. almighty.

æmette f. ant.

ænig prn. aj. any [*ān*].

ær prp. w. d., av., cj. w. sbj. before (of time), formerly; *sp. ærest aj. and av.* first; *ær þām þe, ær þon þe cj.* before. 34, 92.

ærte-bliscop m. archbishop [L. *archiepiscopus*].

ærende n. errand, message. 16.

ærend-raca m. messenger.

ærest *see* **ær**.

æ-risť *mfn.* (rising up), resurrection [ārisan].

ærne-mergen *m.* early morning.

æsc *m.* (ash-tree), warship.

æt *prp.* *w. d.* at; deprivation from; specifying action *wurdon* *æt spræce* 'talked together'.

æt-bregdan *sv.* 3 take (snatch) away.

æt-ēowian *ww.* 2 *w. d.* show.

æt-foran *prp.* *w. d.* in front of.

æt-gædre *av.* together.

æt-iewan *ww.* 1 *w. d., tr.* show, *int.* appear [-ēowian]. 71.

æt-licgan *sv.* 5 lie idle.

ætren *aj.* poisonous, venomous.

æt-samne *av.* together, at once.

æpele *aj.* noble.

æpeling *n.* prince, noble.

ā-faran *sv.* 6 go away, depart.

ā-feallan *sv.* 7 fall down.

ā-flīeman *ww.* 1 put to flight, drive into exile [flēam].

ā-fylan *ww.* 1 defile [fūl].

ā-fyrht *aj.* frightened [*p. pt.* *of* āfyrhtan *from* forht].

āgan *ppr.* possess, own. 77.

ā-gān *v.* happen, befall.

āgen *aj.* own [*p. pt. of* āgan].

ā-giefan *sv.* 5 *w. d.* give, give up, render, deliver.

ge-āgnian *ww.* 2 (make one's own), appropriate [āgen].

Agustus *m:* (*g.* Agustus) August [L.].

āh *seg* āgan.

ā-hebban *sv.* 6 raise, lift up.

ā-hefde *wk. pret. of* āhebban.

ā-hieldan *ww.* 1 incline, bend.

ā-hrēosan *ww.* 2 fall (down).

ā-hrissan *ww.* 1 shake off.

āhte, āhton *see* āgan.

ā-hwær *av.* anywhere.

ā-hȳrian *ww.* 2 hire.

ā-lecgan *ww.* 1 lay down, put away.

ā-līesan *ww.* 1 (loosen), release, liberate; redeem [līas].

ā-līesend *m.* redeemer. 82.

ān *aj. prn.* one (*always strong*); a certain (one); the same; only,

alone (*generally weak*); *g. pl.* in ānra gehwēlc 'each one'. 38, 39, 51.

ān-cenned *aj.* (*p. pt.*) (only-born), only (child).

and *aj.* and.

and-bīdian *ww.* 2 *w. g.* await [bīdan].

andettan *ww.* 1 confess.

and-gīet *m.* sense, meaning; understanding, intelligence.

and-swarian *ww.* 2 *w. d.* answer [andswaru]. 73.

and-swaru *f.* answer, reply [swerian]. 17.

and-weard *aj.* present.

and-wlita *m.* face.

and-wyrdan *ww.* 1 *w. d.* answer [word].

āne *av.* at once, at one time [ān].

Angel *n.* Angeln (in Schleswig).

Angel-cynn *n.* the English nation, England. 27.

an-ginn *n.* beginning.

an-gris-līc *aj.* terrible.

ā-nīman *sv.* 4 take away.

ge-ān-læcan *ww.* 1 unite, join together. 71.

ān-mōd *aj.* unanimous.

ān-mōd-līce *av.* unanimously.

ān-ræd *aj.* constant, resolute.

an-sien *f.* face, appearance.

an-sund *aj.* sound, whole, uncorrupted.

an-weald *m.* rule, authority, power.

apostol *m.* apostle [L.].

ār¹ *f.* honour, grace; mercy. 17.

ār² *n.* copper.

ā-ræd-nes *f.* condition, stipulation.

ā-ræran *ww.* 1 raise, build, build up [ārisan].

ārian *ww.* 2 *w. d.* honour; spare, have mercy on [ār¹].

ā-rīsan *sv.* 1 arise.

ār-lēas *aj.* impious, wicked.

arn *see* iernan.

arod *aj.* quick, prompt; bold.

arod-līce *av.* quickly, readily; boldly.

ār-weorþ *aj.* (worthy of honour), venerable.

āscian *ww.* 2 ask. 73.

ge-āscian *ww.* 2 hear of, discover.

ā-scūfan *sv.* 2 thrust.

ā-sendan *ww.* 1 send.

ā-settan *ww.* 1 set up, build.

ā-smēagan *ww.* 2 consider, think of; conceive; interpret.

assa *m.* ass.

ā-streccan *ww.* 1 stretch out, extend. 72.

ā-styrian *ww.* 1 stir, move.

ā-tēon *sv.* 2 draw, take out.

ā-tēorian *ww.* 2 fail, fall away.

āþ *m.* oath. 13.

ā-weallan *sv.* 7 swarm.

ā-weccan *ww.* 1 awake, rouse [wacian].

ā-wēdan *ww.* 1 go mad [wōd].

ā-wendan *ww.* 1 turn; change; translate.

ā-weorpan *sv.* 3 throw, cast out; reject; depose (king).

ā-werian *ww.* 1 defend.

ā-wēstan *ww.* 1 lay waste, ravage.

ā-wierged *aj.* cursed, accursed [*p. pt. of* *āwiergan* from *wearg*].

ā-wiht *prn.* (ought), anything.

ā-writan *sv.* 1 write; copy.

ā-wyrtwalian *ww.* 2 root up [wyrt].

bæc *n.* back; under *bæc* 'behind'.

bæd, bādon *see* *biddan*.

bær *see* *beran*.

bærnet *n.* burning. 15.

bæron *see* *beran*.

bæsten *aj.* of bast.

bæþ *n.* bath. 15.

bān *n.* bone. 15.

band *see* *bindan*.

baþu *see* *bæþ*.

be *prp.* *w. d.* about, concerning; according to; by, along, in.

beald *aj.* bold.

bearn *n.* child [beran]. 15.

bēatan *sv.* 7 beat. 68.

be-bēodan *sv.* 2 *w. d.* command.

be-byrgan *ww.* 1 bury.

bēc *see* *bōc*.

be-clyppan *ww.* 1 embrace, clasp.

be-çuman *sv.* 4 come, arrive.

ge-bed *n.* prayer [biddan]. 15.

be-dælan *ww.* 1 *w. g.* deprive of [dæl].

bedd *n.* bed.

be-delfan *sv.* 3 (hide by digging), bury.

ge-bed-hūs *n.* oratory, chapel.

be-flæstan *ww.* 1 commit, entrust.

be-foran *prp. w. d.* before.

be-gān *v.* practise, profess.

be-gann *see* *be-ginnan*.

be-geat *see* *be-gietan*.

bēgen *prn. aj.* both. 39.

be-gietan *sv.* 5 get, obtain. 66.

be-ginnan *sv.* 3 begin. 64.

be-hātan *sv.* 7 *w. d.* promise.

be-hēafðian *ww.* 2 behead [hēafod]. 81.

be-healdend *m.* beholder, spectator.

be-horsian *ww.* 2 provide with horses.

be-hrēowsian *ww.* 2 repent [hrēowan].

be-hyðan *ww.* 1 hide.

be-lāwan *ww.* 1 betray.

be-liefan *ww.* 1 believe.

be-lifan *sv.* 1 remain [lāf]. 62.

be-lūcan *sv.* 2 lock, close.

bend *mfn.* bond [bindan].

bēodan *sv.* 2 *w. d.* offer; command. 63.

bēon *v.* be. 78.

bēor *n.* beer.

beorg *m.* hill, mountain. 13.

ge-beorgan *sv.* 3 *w. d.* save, protect. 64.

beorht *aj.* (bright), fair, noble.

bēot-līc *aj.* arrogant, threatening.

bēoton *see* *bēatan*.

be-pāccan *ww.* 1 deceive.

beran *sv.* 4 bear, carry. 65.

ge-beran *sv.* 4 bear (child); carry.

berende *aj.* fruitful, productive [*pres. pt. of* *beran*].

- bern** *n.* barn.
berstan *sv.* 3 burst. 64.
be-sārgian *ww.* 2 lament, be sorry [sārig].
be-scieran *sv.* 4 shear, cut off the hair of.
be-scūfan *sv.* 2 thrust, throw.
be-senčan *ww.* 1 *tr.* sink, submerge.
be-sēon *sv.* 5 see, look.
be-settan *ww.* 1 surround; set about, cover.
be-stealcian *ww.* 2 go stealthily, steal.
be-stelan *sv.* 4 *rfl.* go stealthily.
be-swican *sv.* 1 deceive, betray.
bet *see wel.*
be-tācan *ww.* 1 commit, entrust.
betera, betst *see gōd.*
betonica *f.* betony. [L.]
be-twix *ppp.* *w. a. d.* between, among; **betwix** *pām þe* *cj.* while.
be-þearf *ppv.* need.
beþian *ww.* 2 foment.
be-werian *ww.* 1 defend.
be-witan *ppv.* watch over, have charge of.
bī *ppp.*, stressed form of **be**.
bīdan *sv.* 1 wait. 62.
biddan *sv.* 5 *w. a.* of person and *g.* of thing ask (for), beg, pray.
ge-biddan *sv.* 5 often *rfl.* pray.
ge-biegen *ww.* 1 turn; subject [būgarz].
bieldu *f.* (boldness), arrogance [beald]. 20.
bieme *f.* trumpet.
biergan *sv.* 1 taste, eat.
biernan *sv.* 3 burn. 64.
bī-gang *m.* worship, observance.
bī-geng *m.* worship, observance.
bī-genga *m.* inhabitant; keeper.
bile-wit *aj.* innocent [note on VI, 36].
ge-bindan *sv.* 3 bind. 64.
binnan *av.* inside; *ppp.* *w. d.* in, within [= be-innan].
biscop *m.* bishop [L. episcopus].
biscop-sunu *m.* godson at confirmation.
bismer *nm.* insult, ignominy, shame; **tō bismere** 'with ignominy'.
bismer-full *aj.* shameful.
ge-bismrian *ww.* 2 treat with ignominy, insult; mock.
bist *see bēon.*
bītan *sv.* 1 bite. 62.
bīþ *see bēon.*
blācan *ww.* 1 bleach.
blāwan *sv.* 7 blow. 68.
blegen *f.* (blain), blister, ulcer.
blēow, blēowon *see blāwan.*
blētsian *ww.* 2 bless [note on II, 37].
blētsung *f.* blessing.
bliss *f.* joy, gladness.
ge-blissian *ww.* 2 rejoice. 73.
blīpe *aj.* glad, merry. 29.
blīpe-liče *av.* gladly. 35.
blōd *n.* blood.
blōdgian *ww.* 2 make bloody.
bōc *f.* book. 22.
ge-bōcian *ww.* 2 grant by charter [bōc].
bodian *ww.* 2 announce, preach [bēodan].
bodig *m.* body.
brād *aj.* broad.
bræc, bræcon *see brecan.*
brædu *f.* breadth [brād].
brægd *see brēgdan.*
brēac *see brūcan.*
breca *sv.* 4 break; storm, take (a city). 65.
brēgdan *sv.* 3 pull. 64.
brēmel *m.* bramble.
brēotan *sv.* 2 break. 63.
Breten *f.* Britain. 27.
Brettas *m. pl.* the British (Celts).
Brettisc *aj.* British.
Bret-wealh *m.* Briton.
ge-bringan *ww.* 1 bring; bring forth. 72.
brōhte *see bringan.*
brōþor *m.* brother. 23.
brūcan *sv.* 2 *w. g.* enjoy; use; partake of, take. 63.
brugdon *see brēgdan.*
brýd *f.* bride. 18.
brýd-guma *m.* bridegroom (*lit.* bride-man).

brȳtan *vv.* 1 crush, pound.
būan *vv.* 1 dwell.
būend *m.* dweller [būan]. 25.
bufan *prp. w. d. a.* over, above,
 on [= be-ufan].
ge-būgan *sv.* 2 bend, incline;
 submit. 63.
bunden, bundon *see* bindan.
burg *f.* fortified place; city [beor-
 gan]. 22.
burg-geat *n.* city-gate.
burston *see* berstan.
būtan *av.* outside; *prp. w. d.*
 without, except; *cj.* unless [=
 be-ūtan].
bycgan *vv.* 1 buy. 72.
bȳhþ *see* būgan.
byrgan *vv.* 1 bury. 71.
byrgen *f.* tomb [byrgan].
ge-byrian *vv.* 1 be due, befit.
 71.
byrig *see* burg.
byrst *f.* bristle.
byrþen *f.* burden [beran]. 17.
bȳsen *f.* example; model, exem-
 plar.
ge-bȳsnian *vv.* 2 set an ex-
 ample, instruct by example
 [bȳsen].
ge-bȳsnung *f.* example.
cæġ *f.* key.
cann *see* cunnan.
canōn *m.* canon [L.].
Cant-wara-burg *f.* Canterbury
 [g. of Cant-ware].
Cant-ware *m. pl.* people of Kent
 [L. Cantia and ware]. 14.
cāsere *m.* emperor [L. caesar].
ceafl *m.* jaw.
ċēap *n.* (purchase); cattle.
ċearf *see* ċeorfan.
ċeaster *f.* city [L. castra]. 17.
cēne *aj.* brave, bold.
cennan *vv.* 1 bear (child); pro-
 duce.
Cent *f.* Kent [L. Cantia].
Cent-land *n.* Kent.
ċeorfan *sv.* 3 cut. 64.
ċēosan *sv.* 2 choose. 63.
cēpan *vv.* 1 w. g. attend to, look
 out for.

ċiele *m.* cold.
ċiepan *vv.* 1 trade, sell [ċēap].
ċiepend *m.* seller [ċiepan].
ge-ċierran *vv.* 1 *int.* turn, re-
 turn; submit; *tr.* convert.
ċild *n.* child. 15, 26.
ċild-hād *m.* childhood. 82.
ċinn-bān *n.* jawbone.
ċiriċe *f.* church. 11.
clæne *aj.* clean, pure.
clāþ *m.* cloth.
claww *f.* claw.
clifian *vv.* 2 adhere.
clipian *vv.* 2 call, summon.
clipung *f.* calling.
cnapa *m.* (boy, youth), servant.
cnāwan *sv.* 7 know. 68.
cniht *m.* youth. 13.
cnoll *m.* top, summit.
coccel *m.* corn-cockle, tares.
cōm, cōmon *see* cuman.
coren *see* ċēosan.
cræft *m.* strength; skill; art,
 science; cunning.
crīsten *aj.* Christian.
ge-cuman *sv.* 4 come; cuman
 "ūp 'land'. 65.
cunnan *prp.* know; know how,
 be able. 77.
cunnian *vv.* 2 try, seek, test
 [cunnan].
curen, curon *see* ċēosan.
cūþ *aj.* known [originally *p. pt.* of
 cunnan].
cūþe, cūþon *see* cunnan.
cūþ-liċ *aj.* certain, evident.
cūþ-liċe *av.* certainly, for certain.
cwæde, cwædon *see* cweþan.
cwæþ *see* cweþan.
cwealde *see* cwellan.
cweartern *n.* prison.
cweden *see* cweþan.
cwellan *vv.* 1 kill. 72.
cwēn *f.* queen. 18.
cweþan *sv.* 5 say, speak; name,
 call. 66.
cwlc *aj.* alive.
cwide *m.* speech [cweþan]. 13.
ge-cwid-rāden *f.* agreement.
 82.
cȳdde *see* cȳþan.
cyme *m.* coming [cuman].

cymb *see* **cuman**.

cyne-bearn *n.* child of a royal house.

cyne-gierela *m.* royal robe.

cyne-liče *av.* like a king, royally.

cyne-riče *n.* kingdom.

cyne-stōl *m.* throne.

cyning *m.* king.

cynn *n.* race, people; kind.

cyre *m.* choice [cēosan]. 13.

cyssan *vv.* 1 kiss. 70.

cyst *f.* excellence [cēosan]. 18.

cystig *aj.* (excellent), charitable.

cȳpan *vv.* 1 make known, tell [cūp]. 71.

ge-čȳp-nes *f.* testament.

dǣd *f.* deed. 18.

dæg *m.* day. 13.

dæg-hwæm-liče *av.* daily.

dæl *m.* part; be dǣle 'partly, to some extent'. 13.

dǣlan *vv.* 1 divide, share.

ge-dafenian *vv.* 2 *w. d.* befit.

dagas *see* **dæg**.

dagung *f.* daybreak, dawn.

dēad *aj.* dead.

dēah *see* **dugan**.

dearr *ppv.* dare. 77.

dēap *m.* death.

Defena-scir *f.* Devonshire.

ge-delf *n.* digging.

delfan *sv.* 3 dig. 64.

dēman *vv.* 1 judge [dōm]. 71.

Dene *m. pl.* Danes. 14.

Denisc *nj.* Danish.

dēofol *nm.* devil, the Devil [*L.* diabolus].

dēofol-gield *n.* idol.

dēop *aj.* deep.

dēop-liče *av.* deeply, profoundly.

dēor *n.* wild beast, animal. 15.

dīegol *aj.* secret, hidden.

dīegol-liče *av.* secretly, in secret.

ge-dihtan *vv.* 1 arrange; draw up; compose, write; dictate [*L.* dictare].

disc-pegn *m.* (dish-servant), steward.

dohtor *f.* daughter. 23.

dōm *m.* doom, judgement, sentence. 13.

domne *m.* lord [*L.* domine].

ge-dōn *v.* do; act; make; put. 80.

dorste *see* **dearr**.

draca *m.* dragon [*L.* draco].

dranc *see* **drincan**.

drēorig *aj.* sad, sorrowful.

drifan *sv.* 1 drive. 62.

drinc *m.* drink.

drincan *sv.* 3 drink. 64.

dropa *m.* drop.

druncen *see* **drincan**.

drȳgan *vv.* 1 dry.

dryhten *m.* lord.

dryppan *vv.* 1 *tr.* drip [dropa].

dugan *ppv.* avail, be useful. 77.

dūn *f.* hill, down.

dūn-land *n.* downland.

durron *see* **dearr**.

duru *f.* door. 19.

dūst *n.* dust, powder.

ge-dwol-mann *m.* heretic.

ge-dwol-sum *aj.* misleading.

ge-dwyld *n.* error [gedwol-].

dyde, dydon *see* **dōn**.

dyppan *vv.* 1 dip.

dysig *aj.* foolish.

ēa *f. (g. sg. ēa)* river.

ēac *av.* also; ēac swelče 'also, moreover'.

ēacnian *vv.* 2 increase.

ēadig *aj.* (prosperous), blessed.

ēagan-bearhtm *m.* twinkling of an eye.

ēage *n.* eye. 11.

ēag-þȳrel *n.* (eye-hole), window.

eahta *num.* eight.

ēalā *interj.* oh!

eald *aj.* old; *cp.* **ieldra**. 29, 32.

ealdor *m.* chief, master, lord, prince. 13.

ealdor-biscop *m.* high priest.

ealdor-mann *m.* chief, officer, governor, nobleman.

Eald-seaxe *m. pl.* Old (i.e. Continental) Saxons.

eall *aj.* all.

eall *av.* quite, just; completely.

eall-nīwe *aj.* quite new.

eall-swā *av.* in the same way.

eallunga *av.* entirely.

- ealu** *n.* ale.
eard *m.* country, native land.
 13.
eardian *vv.* 2 *int.* dwell, live;
tr. inhabit. 73.
eardung-stōw *f.* dwelling-place.
ēare *n.* ear. 11.
earfope *n.* hardship, trouble.
earm *m.* arm (of the body).
earm *aj.* poor, wretched, despicable.
earm-liče *av.* miserably, wretchedly.
earn *m.* eagle.
eart *see* **wesan**.
ēast *av.* eastwards.
Ēast-enge *m. pl.* East Anglians.
ēaste-weard *aj.* eastern, the east part of. 82.
Ēastran *f. pl.* Easter.
ēast-rihte *av.* eastwards.
Ēast-seaxe *m. pl.* East Saxons.
ēape-lič *aj.* insignificant, weak.
ge-ēap-mēdan *vv.* 1 humble [ēapmōd].
ēap-mōd *aj.* humble.
ēap-mōd-liče *av.* humbly.
ēce *aj.* eternal.
ēc-nes *f.* eternity.
ge-efen-lācan *vv.* 1 match, imitate.
efne *av.* behold!; indeed; just.
efsian *vv.* 2 cut the hair of.
eft *av.* again; afterwards, then; back.
ege *m.* fear. 13.
eges-lič *aj.* terrible, awful.
ēhtere *m.* persecutor.
elcor *av.* otherwise.
ele *m.* oil [*L.* oleum].
elles *av.* otherwise.
elpend *m.* elephant [*L.* elephant-].
el-pēodig-nes *f.* travel or living in foreign lands; exile.
ende *m.* end. 13.
ge-ende-byrdan *vv.* 1 set in order, arrange.
ende-byrd-nes *f.* order.
endemes *av.* together.
ge-endian *vv.* 2 end, die. 73.
endleofta *aj.* eleventh. 38.
engel *m.* angel [*L.* angelus]. 13.
Engla-land *n.* England [*g. pl.* of Engle]. 27.
Engle *m. pl.* Angles; the English [*Angel*]. 14.
Englisc *aj.* English; *n.* the English language [*Engle*].
ēode, ēodon *see* **gān**.
eom *see* **wesan**.
eorl *m.* nobleman. 13.
eornost-liče *av.* in truth, indeed.
eorp-būend *m.* dweller on earth, man.
eorpe *f.* earth. 11.
eorp-fæst *aj.* firm in the earth.
ēow *see* **pū**.
ēower *prn. aj.* your, yours. 43, 46.
epistola *m.* letter [*L.*].
etan *sv.* 5 eat. 66.
ēpel *m.* native land. 13.
ge-fadian *vv.* 2 order, dispose, arrange.
fadung *f.* order, arrangement.
fazc *n.* space, interval.
fæder *m.* father. 23.
ge-fægen *aj. w. g.* glad.
fæger *aj.* beautiful.
fægnian *vv.* 2 *w. g.* rejoice, be glad.
fæmne *f.* virgin. 11.
fær *m.* (sudden) danger.
fær-lič *aj.* sudden. 29.
fær-liče *av.* suddenly.
fæst *aj.* firm, fast.
fæstan *vv.* 1 fast.
fæste *av.* firmly, securely.
fæsten¹ *n.* fortification, fortress; stronghold [fæst]. 15.
fæsten² *n.* fast, fasting [fæstan].
fæst-liče *av.* firmly; strictly, resolutely.
fæt *n.* vessel. 15.
fandian *vv.* 2 *w. g.* try, test; tempt [findan]. 73.
fangen *see* **fōn**.
faran *sv.* 6 go. 67.
ge-faran *sv.* 6 die.
fatu *see* **fæt**.
fēa *aj. pl.* few. 29.

ge-*fēa* *m.* joy. 11.
 feaht *see* feohtan.
 feallan *sv.* 7 fall. 68.
 fēawe *see* fēa.
 feax *n.* hair.
 fela *aj. indecl., usually w. g. many,*
 much. 29.
 feld *m.* field. 13.
 fēng, fēngon *see* fōn.
 feoh *n.* cattle; money, property.
 15.
 feoh-bigen^a *m.* cattle-keeper.
 feoh-ge-hāt *n.* promise of money.
 ge-*feoht* *n.* fight, fighting.
 ge-*feohtan* *sv.* 3 fight. 64.
 fēole *f.* file.
 fēolian *sv.* 2 file.
 fēoll, fēollon *see* feallan.
 fēond *m.* enemy. 24.
 ge-*fēonde* *aj.* joyful [*pres. pt. of*
 ge-*fēon* 'rejoice'].
 feorh *nm.* life. 13.
 feorm *f.* (food), feast, banquet.
 17.
 feorr *av.* far. 34.
 fēorþa *aj.* fourth. 38.
 fēower *num.* four. 40.
 ge-*fēra* *m.* companion [fōr]. 11.
 fēran *sv.* 1 go, travel; fare [fōr].
 fērend *m.* (traveller), soldier.
 ferian *sv.* 1 carry [faran]. 71.
 fersc *aj.* fresh.
 fetian *sv.* fetch, bring. 74.
 ge-*fettē* *see* fetian.
 fiend *see* fēond.
 fierd *f.* army, militia; campaign
 [faran]. 18.
 fierd-wiſe *f.* campaign order.
 fierlen *aj.* distant [feorr].
 fierst *mf.* period, time.
 fīf *num.* five. 40.
 fīf-tīg *num.* fifty.
 findan *sv.* 3 (*weak pret.* funde)
 find. 64.
 finol *m.* fennel.
 fisc *m.* fish. 13.
 fiscere *m.* fisherman. 13.
 fisc-wielle *aj.* rich in fish.
 flēam *m.* flight [flēon].
 flēogan *sv.* 2 fly. 63.
 flēon *sv.* 2 flee. 63.
 flēot *m.* estuary.

flēotan *sv.* 2 float. 63.
 ge-*flēman* *sv.* 1 put to flight
 [flēam].
 ge-*flit* *n.* dispute.
 flōd *mn.* flood. 15.
 flōr *f.* floor. 19.
 flota *m.* fleet. 11.
 flot-here *m.* army from a fleet,
 army of pirates.
 flot-mann *m.* sailor, pirate.
 flōwan *sv.* 7 flow. 68.
 fluḡon *see* flēon.
 flyht *m.* flight [flēogan].
 fōda *m.* food. 11.
 folc *n.* people, nation. 15.
 folc-lič *aj.* popular, public;
 common.
 folḡian *sv.* 2 *w. d.* follow; obey.
 ge-*fōn* *sv.* 7 seize, take, capture;
 fōn tō 'take up, begin'; fōn tō
 riče 'come to the throne'; fēngon
 tōḡædre 'joined together'. 68.
 for *prp. w. d. i., local* before: for
 worulde 'in the eyes of the
 world'; *causal* for, because of,
 for the sake of: for Gode ne
 dorste 'for the fear of God . . .';
temporal before: nū for fēam
 ḡcārum 'a few years ago'; *w. a.*
 instead of, for. for þām, for
 þy *av.* therefore; for þām
 (þe) *cj.* because.
 fōr¹ *f.* journey, march, expedition
 [faran].
 fōr² *see* faran.
 for-*bærnan* *sv.* 1 *tr.* burn (up).
 for-*bēodan* *sv.* 2 *w. d.* forbid.
 for-*ceorfan* *sv.* 3 cut off.
 ford *m.* ford. 13.
 for-*dilḡian* *sv.* 2 destroy.
 for-*dōn* *v.* destroy.
 for-*ealdod* *aj.* aged [*p. pt. of*
 forealdian 'grow old'].
 fore-*scēawian* *sv.* 2 pre-or-
 dain, appoint; provide.
 fore-*secḡan* *sv.* 3 say before;
 se foresæḡda 'the aforesaid'.
 fore-*sprecan* *sv.* 5 say before;
 se foresprecena 'the aforesaid'.
 for-*ḡiefan* *sv.* 5 *w. d.* give,
 grant; forgive.
 forht *aj.* afraid.

forhtian *vv.* 2 fear, be afraid of.
for-·hwega *av.* somewhere.
for-·lætan *sv.* 7 leave, abandon.
for-·lēosan *sv.* 2 lose. 63.
for-·liger *n.* fornication.
forma *aj. sp.* first. 34, 38.
for-·niman *sv.* 4 carry off; destroy, devour.
for-·sēon *sv.* 5 despise, scorn.
for-·slēan *sv.* 6 cut through.
for-·standan *sv.* 6 (stand before), protect, defend.
forþ *av.* forth, forwards, on, out; also.
forþ-·fēran *vv.* 1 depart, die.
forþ-·gān *v.* proceed, pass on.
forþ-·gēnge *aj.* thriving, advancing.
for-·weorþan *sv.* 3 perish, be lost.
fōt *m.* foot. 22.
frægn *see* frīgnan.
fram *prp. w. d.* from; *agent w.* passive by.
Francan *m. pl.* Franks.
Franc-land *n.* the land of the Franks, France.
frēcen-nes *f.* danger.
frem-ful-nes *f.* benefit.
fremian *vv.* 2 benefit, help.
ge-·fremman *vv.* 1 perform, do, commit. 70, 71.
frēond *m.* friend. 24.
frēond-scipe *m.* friendship. 13.
frīgnan *sv.* 3 ask. 64.
frip *m.* peace; *frip niman* 'make peace'.
ge-·fripian *vv.* 2 protect, shelter.
frōrof *f.* comfort. 17.
fruma *m.* beginning; on *fruman* 'at first'.
fugol *m.* bird. 13.
fugol-wielle *aj.* rich in birds.
fuhton *see* feohtan.
fūl *aj.* foul, impure.
full *aj. w. g.* full.
full *av.* entirely, very.
fullian *vv.* 2 baptize.
ful-lice *av.* fully.
fulluht *m.* baptism [fullian].
fultum *m.* help; forces, troops.
ge-·fultumian *vv.* 2 *w. d.* help.

funde *see* findan.
furþurn *av.* even.
fūs *aj.* (eager); hastening.
fylgan *vv.* 1 *w. d.* follow.
fyllan *vv.* 1 fill, fulfil [full]. 70, 71.
ge-·fyllend-nes *f.* fulfilment.
fȳr *n.* fire.
fȳrmest *aj. sp.* first, chief. 34.
ge-·gādrian *vv.* 2 gather. 73.
gærs *n.* grass.
gafeluc *m.* spear, javelin.
gafol *n.* interest, profit.
gamen *n.* sport.
gān *v. go.* 80.
ge-·gān *v.* gain, conquer. 81.
gangan, gangende *see* gān. 68, 80.
gār-secg *m.* ocean, sea.
gāst *m.* spirit; se hālgā gāst 'The Holy Ghost'. 13.
gāst-lic *aj.* spiritual.
gāst-lice *av.* spiritually.
gatu *see* geat.
ge *aj.* and; *ge . . . ge* both . . . and.
gē *see* pū.
geaf, gēafe, gēafon *see* giefan.
gealga *m.* gallows.
gēar *n.* year. 15.
gēara *av.* formerly, of yore.
gēard *m.* enclosure, court. 13.
gearu *aj.* ready. 29.
geat *n. (pl. gatu)* gate. 15.
gēo *av.* formerly; *gēo gēara* 'long ago'.
geogop *f.* youth.
geolca *m.* yolk.
geōmrung *f.* grief, lamentation.
geond *prp. w. a.* through, throughout; as far as, up to.
geong *aj.* young. 32.
geongling *m.* youth, child.
georn *aj.* eager.
georne *av.* eagerly, earnestly.
georn-lice *av.* zealously.
Germānia *f.* Germany. 27.
giefan *sv.* 5 give. 66.
giefta *f. pl.* marriage, wedding [giefan].
giefu *f.* gift; grace (of God) [giefan]. 17.

gieldan *sv.* 3 pay. 64.
gierela *m.* clothing; garment.
ge-gierwan *ww.* 1 (prepare),
 equip, gird; dress [gearw]. 71.
giet *av.* yet, still; further, be-
 sides; **nū giet still, pā giet**
 yet, as yet.
gif *cj.* if.
glæd *aj.* glad. 29.
glēaw *aj.* prudent, wise.
glēd *f.* glowing coal; fire.
glengan *ww.* 1 adorn; trim
 (lamp).
gnidan *sv.* 1 rub, pound. 62.
god *m.* God; *nm.* god. 15.
gōd *aj.* good; *cp.* **betera**, *sp.*
 betst. 29, 30, 33.
gōd-cund-nes *f.* divinity; deity.
gōd-nes *f.* goodness. 17.
god-spell *n.* gospel [note on
 V, 11].
gold *n.* gold. 15.
gold-hord *m.* treasure.
gōs *f.* goose. 22.
grædig *aj.* greedy.
græg *aj.* grey.
Grēcas *m. pl.* Greeks.
grēne *aj.* green.
grētan *ww.* 1 greet, salute.
grindan *sv.* 3 grind. 64.
grist-bitung *f.* gnashing of
 teeth.
grōwan *sv.* 7 grow. 68.
grund *m.* bottom.
grymetian *ww.* 2 roar, rage.
guma *m.* man. 11.
gylden *aj.* golden [gold].
habban *ww.* 3 have; take; get. 74.
ge-habban *ww.* 3 contain.
hād *m.* rank, order; sex.
ge-hādod *aj.* ordained, in or-
 ders, clerical [*p. pt.* of **hādan**
 'ordain'].
hæbbe *see habban.*
hæfde, -on, hæfþ *see habban.*
hæftan *ww.* 1 hold fast.
hæft-nied *f.* subjection.
hælan *ww.* 1 heal, cure; save
 [hāl].
hælend *m.* Saviour. 25, 82.
hælu *f.* salvation [hāl].

hæpse *f.* hasp, fastening.
hæs *f.* command. 18.
hæte *f.* heat [hāt].
hætt *see hātan.*
hæp *f.* heath.
hæpen *aj.* heathen [hæp].
hagolian *ww.* 2 hail.
ge-hāl *aj.* whole, uninjured. 29.
hālga *m.* saint [*weak form of*
hālīg].
ge-hālgian *ww.* 2 hallow, conse-
 crate.
hālian *ww.* 2 *int.* heal.
hālīg *aj.* holy, sacred, conse-
 crated. 29.
hālīg-dōm *m.* holy object, relic.
hālwende *aj.* salutary, useful.
hālwend-nes *f.* salubrity.
hām *m.* home. 13. *av.* home-
 (wards). 85.
hām-weard *av.* home(wards).
hand *f.* hand; side. 19.
hand-cweorn *f.* hand-mill.
hangian *ww.* 2 *int.* hang [hōn].
hāt *aj.* hot.
hātan *sv.* 7 command, order;
 call, name. 68, 95.
ge-hātan *sv.* 7 promise.
hätte *passive of hātan.* 53.
hē *prn.* he, it. 44.
hēafod *n.* head. 15.
hēafod-mann *m.* (head-man),
 ruler, captain.
hēah *aj.* high, exalted; *sp.*
hiehst. 29, 32.
hēah-fæder *m.* patriarch.
healdan *sv.* 7 hold, keep; pre-
 serve, maintain; observe. 68.
healf *f.* half; side. 17.
healf *aj.* half. 41.
healf-nacod *aj.* half-naked.
hēa-lič *aj.* exalted [hēah].
heall *f.* hall.
heard *aj.* hard; strong; severe.
hēawan *sv.* 7 hew. 68.
hebban *sv.* 6 raise, lift up. 67.
hefe *see hebban.*
hefe-lič *aj.* heavy, severe.
hefel-præd *m.* thread (for weav-
 ing).
hefig *aj.* heavy.
hefig-nes *f.* weight, burden.

hefig-tieme *aj.* burdensome.
helpan *sv.* 3 help. 64.
ge-hende *aj. w. d.* near, at hand [hand].
hēo *see* hē.
heofon *m.* heaven; *often in pl.:* heofona *rice* 'the kingdom of heaven'.
heofone *f.* heaven.
heofon-līc *aj.* heavenly, of heaven.
hēold, **hēoldon** *see* healdan.
heonan *av.* hence, from here.
heorot *m.* hart, stag.
heorte *f.* heart. 11.
hēr *av.* here; hither; **hēr-æfter** hereafter, after this.
here *m.* army, raiding force. 13.
here-hȳp *f.* booty.
here-rēaf *n.* spoil, booty.
here-toga *m.* army-leader, general [toga *from* tēon].
here-wīc *n. pl.* camp.
ge-hergian *ww.* 2 ravage, plunder [here]. 73.
hergung *f.* ravaging, pillage.
herian *ww.* 1 praise. 71.
herige *see* here.
hēt, **hēton** *see* hātan.
hete *m.* hatred. 13.
hīe *see* hē.
hieg *n.* hay.
hiehst *see* hēah.
hielt *see* healdan.
hiera *see* hē.
ge-hieran *ww.* 1 hear; *w. d.* obey, follow. 70, 71, 81.
hierde *m.* shepherd, herdsman. 13.
hierd-ræden *f.* guardianship. 17.
hiere *see* hē.
ge-hier-sum *aj. w. d.* obedient, subject [hieran]. 29.
ge-hier-sumian *ww.* 2 *w. d.* obey; *tr.* subjugate.
ge-hier-sum-nes *f.* obedience.
him, **hine** *see* hē.
hired *m.* family, household.
his *see* hē.
hīw *n.* appearance, form; hue.
hlæder *f.* ladder.

hlæfdige *f.* lady [hlāf]. 11.
hlāf *m.* loaf; bread. 13.
hlāford *m.* lord, master [hlāf] 13. 6.
hleahor *m.* laughter.
hlēapan *sv.* 7 leap. 68.
hlȳdan *ww.* 1 make a noise, shout [hlūd 'loud'].
hnappian *ww.* 2 doze.
hōf *see* hebban.
holt *n.* wood.
hōn *sv.* 7 *tr.* hang [hangian]. 68.
horn *m.* horn.
ge-horsian *ww.* 2 provide with horses.
hræding *f.* haste, hurry.
hræd-līce *av.* quickly.
hrægl *n.* dress, clothing.
hran *m.* whale.
hrape *av.* quickly.
hrēod *n.* reed.
hrēosan *sv.* 2 fall. 63.
hrēowan *sv.* 2 *often impers. w. d.* rue, repent. 63.
hrieman *ww.* 1 shout, cry out.
hrinan *sv.* 1 touch. 62.
hrīper *n.* head of cattle, ox.
hruron *see* hrēosan.
hrycg *m.* back.
hryre *m.* fall [hrēosan]. 13.
hū *av.* how.
hū-līc *aj.* what kind of.
hund *n. w. g.* hundred. 38, 40.
hund-eahta-tig *num.* eighty.
hund-nigon-tig *num.* ninety.
hund-seofon-tig *num.* seventy.
hungrig *aj.* hungry.
huniġ *n.* honey.
huntung *f.* hunting.
hūru *av.* especially; indeed.
hūs *n.* house. 15.
hux-līce *av.* ignominiously, with insult.
hwā *prn. interrog.* who; *indef.* anyone, someone. 49, 51.
ge-hwā *prn.* everyone. 51.
hwæl *m.* whale. 13.
hwæm *see* hwā, hwæt.
hwær *av. cj.* where; swā hwær swā 'wherever'.
ge-hwær *av.* everywhere.
hwæs *see* hwā, hwæt.

hwæt¹ *prn. interrog.* what; *indef.* anything, something; *interj.* lo! now, well. 49, 51.

hwæt² *aj.* vigorous; brave. 29.

hwæte *m.* wheat.

hwæper *cj.* whether; **hwæper** *pe* introduces a direct question.
ge-hwæper *prn. aj.* either, each, both; *cj.* **gehwæper ge . . . ge** both . . . and.

hwæpre *av.* however.

hwanon *av. cj.* whence.

hwelc *prn. aj. interrog.* which, what, what kind of; *indef.* any(one), some(one). 51.

ge-hwelc *prn.* each, everyone.

hwil *f.* while, time.

hwilum *av.* formerly, once.

hwit *aj.* white.

hwite *n.* white (of egg).

hwon *instrumental of hwæt:* for **hwon** why.

hwȳ *av.* why [*inst. of hwæt*].

hycgan *ww.* 3 think. 74.

hȳdan *ww.* 1 hide.

hȳrian *ww.* 2 hire.

iċ *prn.* I. 42.

idel *aj.* idle; useless, vain; on **idel** 'in vain'.

iēg *f.* island.

iēg-land *n.* island.

iēldan *ww.* 1 delay, be late [*eald*].

iēlde *m. pl.* men. 14.

iēldra *see eald.*

iēldran *m. pl.* ancestors [*iēldra*].

11.

iēldu *f.* age. 20.

iērfē-numa *m.* heir, successor.

iērnian *sv.* 3 run, flow. 64.

iērrē *aj.* angry.

il *m.* hedgehog.

ilca *aj.* same (*always with def. art. or demons., and so weak*).

in *prp. w. d. a. in;* into. 96.

inn *av.* in (*of motion*).

innan *prp. w. d. a. within, in;* into; *av.* within.

inne *av.* within, inside; *prp.* (*after relative* **pe**) in.

in-tō *prp. w. d.* into.

Iotan *m. pl.* Jutes.

is *see wesian.*

isern *n.* iron.

istst *see etan.*

Iūdēas, Iūdēi *m. pl.* Jews.

Iūdēisc *aj.* Jewish; **pā Iūdēiscan** 'the Jews'.

lā *interj.* oh! **lā lēof** 'sir'.

lāc *n.* gift; offering, sacrifice.

lād-pēow *m.* guide [*lādan*].

ge-lāccan *ww.* 1 seize; catch. 71.

ge-lādan *ww.* 1 lead; carry, bring, take. 71.

Lāden *n.* Latin [*L. latinum*].

Lāden-bōc *f.* Latin book.

læg, lāgon *see licgan.*

lāran *ww.* 1 *w. double a.* teach, educate [*lār*].

ge-lāred *aj.* learned [*p. pt. of lāran*].

lās *f. (g. d. lāswe)* pasture. 17.

lāssa, lāst *see lȳtel.*

lātan *sv.* 7 let; leave. 68.

lāwede *aj.* lay; unlearned.

lāf *f.* remnant, remains; **tō lāfe** **bēon** 'to remain, be left' [(*be*)-*lifan*]. 17.

lamb *n.* lamb. 26.

ge-lamp *see ge-limpan.*

land *n.* land, country. 15.

land-folc *n.* people of a country.

land-lēode *m. pl.* people of a country.

lang *aj.* long; *cp.* **lengra.** 32.

lange *av.* long, for a long time; *cp.* **leng.** 36.

lang-līce *av.* for a long time.

lār *f.* teaching; doctrine. 17.

lārēow *m.* teacher [*lār and pēow*].

late *av.* late.

ge-lāþian *ww.* 2 invite.

lēad *n.* lead.

lēaf *n.* leaf.

ge-lēafa *m.* belief, faith. 11.

ge-lēaf-full *aj.* believing, pious, devout.

lēah *m.* clearing; wood.

leahor *m.* vice, sin, crime.

lēas *aj.* false, untruthful; *in com-* *position* -less.

lēat *see lūtan.*

lecgan *ww.* 1 lay [*licgan*]. 71

ge-·lendan *vv.* 1 go; land [land].
leng *see* lange.
lengra *see* lang.
lēo *mf.* lion, lioness [L.]. 11.
lēod *f.* nation, people.
lēode *m. pl.* people. 14.
lēof *aj.* dear, beloved; pleasant;
 mē lēofre wære 'I would rather'
 [lufu]. 31.
leofaþ, **leofode** *see* libban.
lēoht *aj.* light, bright, clear.
lēoht *aj.* light (in weight).
lēoht-fæt *n.* (light-vessel), lamp.
leornian *vv.* 2 learn. 73.
lēt, **lēton** *see* lætan.
libban *vv.* 3 live. 74.
liċ *n.* body, corpse. 15.
ge-·liċ *aj. w. d.* like.
ge-·liċe *av.* likewise, in like
 manner, alike, equally.
licgan *sv.* 5 lie. 66.
lic-hama *m.* body.
lician *vv.* 2 *w. d.* please.
ge-·liefan *vv.* 1 believe [ge-
 lēafa]. 71.
lif *n.* life.
ge-·limp *n.* event, emergency.
ge-·limpan *sv.* 3 happen. 64.
liþ *see* licgan.
loc *n.* lock, bar.
locc *m.* lock of hair.
locen *see* lūcan.
lof *n.* praise, glory.
ge-·lōgian *vv.* 2 place; occupy,
 settle, furnish.
ge-·lōm *aj.* frequent.
ge-·lōme *av.* often.
losian *vv.* 2 *w. d.* be lost; him
 losaþ 'he loses' [(for)lēosan].
 73.
lūcan *sv.* 2 close, lock, fasten.
 63.
lucon *see* lūcan.
lufian *vv.* 2 love. 73.
lufu *f.* love [lēof]. 17.
Lunden-burg *f.* London [L.
 Lundonia].
lust *m.* desire; pleasure.
ge-·lust-ful-liċe *av.* gladly,
 heartily.
lūtan *sv.* 2 bend, stoop. 63.
lyft *f.* air; *pl.* climate. 18.

lyre *m.* loss. 13.
lýt *av.* little. 37.
lýtel *aj.* little; *cp.* læssa, *sp.*
 læst., 33.
lýtlum *av.* little by little [*d. of*
 lýtel].
lýþer-lið *aj.* bad, poor, mean.
lýþre *aj.* bad, wicked.

mā *indecl.* more [*cp. of* micle].
macian *vv.* 2 make, do. 73.
mæd *f.* (*g. d.* mædwe) meadow.
 17.
mæg *ppv.* can, am/is able. 77.
mægen *n.* strength, capacity;
 virtue [mæg].
mægþ *f.* family; tribe, nation;
 generation.
ge-·mæne *aj.* common; him ge-
 mænne 'between them'.
mære *aj.* famous, glorious, great
 (*metaphorically*). 31.
ge-·mære *n.* border; territory.
mærsian *vv.* 2 extol, celebrate
 [mære].
mærþu *f.* glory [mære].
mæsse *f.* mass [L. missa]. 11.
mæsse-præost *m.* mass-priest.
mæst *see* micel.
mæwþ *see* māwan.
magister *m.* master, teacher
 [L.].
magon *see* mæg.
man *indef.* one [mann]. 51.
mān *n.* wickedness.
mān-dæd *f.* evil deed; sin,
 crime.
mān-full *aj.* wicked, evil.
manig *aj.* many. 29.
ge-·manig-fieldan *vv.* 1 multi-
 ply.
mann *m.* man; person. 22.
manna *m.* man.
mann-ræden *f.* allegiance.
māra *see* micel.
martyr *m.* martyr [L.].
māþm *m.* treasure. 13.
māþm-fæt *n.* precious vessel.
māwan *sv.* 7 mow. 68.
mē *see* iċ.
mearc *f.* boundary. 17.
mēd *f.* reward, pay.

med-miċel *aj.* small, short.
menigū *f.* multitude. 20.
menn *see* mann.
mennisc *aj.* human [mʔnn].
mennisc-nes *f.* incarnation.
meolc *f.* milk.
mere-ġrota *m.* pearl '[L. margarita].
mere-swin *n.* porpoise.
merġen *m.* morning [morgen].
merian *ww.* 2 purify, clarify.
metan *sv.* 5 measure. 66.
ġe-mētan *ww.* 1 meet; find [ġemōt]. 70.
mete *m.* (*pl.* mettas) food. 13.
miċel *aj.* great, much; *cp.* māra, *sp.* māest. 29, 33.
miċel-nes *f.* size, bulk.
micle *av.* greatly, much, (by) far; *cp.* mā more, rather.
miclum *av.* greatly, much [*d.* of micel].
mid *prp.* *w.* *d.* *i.* with; by means of; **mid þæm þe**, **mid þy** *aj.* when, as; since.
midd *aj.* mid, middle.
middan-ġeard *m.* world [*lit.* 'middle enclosure'].
Middel-engle *m.* *pl.* Middle Angles.
Mierċe *m.* *pl.* Mercians [mearc]. 14.
miht *f.* might, strength, power; virtue [mæg]. 18.
mihte, **mihton** *see* mæg.
mihtig *aj.* mighty, strong.
mīl *f.* mile [L. milia (passuum)].
mīlde *aj.* (mild), merciful.
mild-heort *aj.* (mild-hearted), merciful.
mīn *prn.* *aj.* my, mine. 42, 46.
missen-liċ *aj.* various, diverse.
mīpan *sv.* 1 hide. 62.
mōd *n.* heart, mind, spirit. 15.
mōdig *aj.* proud.
mōdig-nes *f.* pride.
mōdor *f.* mother. 23.
molde *f.* (mould), earth.
mōna *m.* moon. 11.
mōnap *m.* (*pl.* mōnap) month [mōna]. 13.
mōr *m.* moor, waste land.

morgen *m.* morning.
morþ *n.* violent deed, crime.
moru *f.* root.
mōste *see* mōt.
mōt *ppv.* may. 77.
ġe-mōt *n.* meeting. 15.
ġe-munan *ppv.* remember. 77.
munt *m.* mountain, hill [L. montem].
munuc *m.* monk [L. monachus].
munuc-lif *n.* (monastic. life), monastery.
murcian *ww.* 2 grumble, complain.
murnan *sv.* 3 mourn. 64.
mūs *f.* mouse. 22.
muscule *f.* mussel [L. musculus].
mūþ *m.* mouth.
mūpa *m.* mouth of a river, estuary [mūþ]. 11.
ġe-myndig *aj.* *w.* *g.* mindful.
mynetere *m.* money-changer [mynet 'coin' from L. moneta].
mynster *n.* monastery [L. monasterium]. 15.
mynster-mann *m.* monk.

nā *av.* not, no [= ne ā].
nabban = ne habban.
nædre *f.* adder, snake. 11.
næfde, **næfst**, **næfþ** = ne hæfde, etc.
næfre *av.* never [= ne æfre].
nægel *m.* nail (in both senses). 13.
nænig *prn.* *aj.* none, no [= ne ænig].
næs = ne wæs.
nāh = ne āh.
nāht, **nān-wiht**, **nā-wiht** *prn.* *w.* *g.* (naught), nothing; *av.* not (at all).
nāht-nes *f.* worthlessness.
nam *see* niman.
nama *m.* name. 11.
nāmon *see* niman.
nān *prn.* *aj.* none, no [= ne ān].
nān-wiht, **nā-wiht** *see* nāht.
nāt = ne wāt.
nāwþer *prn.* neither; *aj.* **nāwþer ne . . . ne** neither . . . nor [= ne āhwæper ('either')].

ne *av.* not; *cj.* nor; **ne . . . ne** neither . . . nor.
nēah *av. (aj. in cp. and sp.)* near; *sp.* **nīehst**: æt nīehstan 'at last'. 34.
nearo-liče *av.* (narrowly), briefly, summarily.
nearu *aj.* narrow.
nēat *n.* beast; *pl.* cattle.
nēa-wist *fm.* neighbourhood [nēah, wešan].
nemnan *ww.* I name, call [nama]. 71.
nēod-liče *av.* carefully, diligently.
nerian *ww.* I save. 71.
nese *av.* no.
nicor *m.* water-monster; hippopotamus.
nīed *f.* necessity. 18.
niede *av.* of necessity, by compulsion.
niedunga *av.* of necessity.
nīehst *see* nēah.
nīeten *n.* animal, beast [nēat].
nīgon *num.* nine.
nīgon-tēopa *aj.* nineteenth.
nīgoþa *aj.* ninth.
nīht *f.* night. 22.
nīht-gēnga *m.* night-prowler.
ge-nīman *sv.* 4 take, capture; pluck. 65.
nīs = ne is.
nīwan *av.* newly, lately.
nīwe *aj.* new.
ge-nōg *aj.* enough.
nolde = ne wolde.
norþ *av.* northwards; *aj.* northern.
Norþ(an)-hymbre *m. pl.* Northumbrians [*L.* Humbra]. 14.
norþ-dæl *m.* northern part, north.
Norþ-hymbra-land *n.* Northumbria. 27.
Norþ-wēalas *m. pl.* the Welsh.
nos-þýrel *n.* nostril.
nū *av.* now, just now; *cj.* *causal* now that, since.
numen *see* nīman.
ge-nyht-sum *aj.* abundant.
nyle, nylle = ne wil(l)e. 79.

nyste = ne wiste. 76.
nyt-nes *f.* use, benefit.
nyton = ne witon. 76.
nytt *aj.* useful, profitable. 29.
of *prp. w. d.* from, from among, of, of motion, origin, privation, release, &c.; *partitive* of ēowrum ele 'some of your oil'; concerning.
of-drædd *aj.* afraid [*p. pt.* of ofdrædan 'dread'].
ōfer *m.* bank.
ofer *prp. w. d. a.* over; on; about; time after; during.
ofer-hergian *ww.* 2 ravage, overrun.
ofer-sāwan *sv.* 7 sow over.
ge-offrian *ww.* 2 offer, sacrifice [*L.* offerre].
offrung *f.* offering, sacrifice.
of-slēan *sv.* 6 kill, slay; destroy.
of-sniþan *sv.* 1 slaughter.
of-spring *m.* offspring [springan].
oft *gv.* often.
of-tēon *sv.* 2 *w. d.* of person and *g.* of thing deny, deprive of.
of-þýrst *aj.* thirsty [*p. pt.* of ofþýrstan from þurst].
of-wundrod *aj.* astonished.
ō-læcung *f.* flattery, cajolery.
on *prp. w. d. a.* on; in; into; hostility against: on hie fuhton; time in. 96.
on-ælan *ww.* 1 kindle, light.
on-biergan *ww.* 1 *w. g.* taste, eat.
on-cnāwan *sv.* 7 perceive, understand, recognize.
on-drædan *sv.* 7 and *ww.* 1 dread, fear. 68.
on-fōn *sv.* 7 often *w. d.* receive.
on-gēan *prp. w. d. a.* towards, to meet; opposite; hostility against; *av.* back.
on-gēaton *see* on-gietan.
on-gietan *sv.* 5 perceive, see. 66.
on-ginnan *sv.* 3 begin; sometimes pleonastic—note on III 7. 64.

on-*gunnon* *see* on-*ginnan*.
 on-*lūcan* *sv.* 2 unlock. 81.
 on-*middan* *prp. w. d.* in the midst of.
 on-*styrian* *ww.* 1 stir, move.
 on-*uppan* *prp. w. d.* upon, above.
 on-*weg* *av.* away.
 open-*lice* *av.* openly, publicly.
 ora! *m.* bank, shore.
 ora² *m.* ore.
 orgel-*lice* *av.* proudly, insolently.
 or-*mæte* *aj.* immense, boundless [metan].
 or-*sorg* *aj.* unconcerned, careless.
 oþ *prp. w. a.* until, up to, as far as; oþ *pæt* *cj.* until.
 oþer *prn. aj.* (always strong) second; other; one or other of two. 4p.
 oppe *cj. or;* oppe . . . oppe either . . . or.
 oxa *m.* ox. 11.

panne *f.* pan.
 pāpa *m.* pope [L.].
 pening *m.* penny.
 Peohtas *m. pl.* Picts.
 Philistēi *m. pl.* Philistines [L.].
 Philistēisc *aj.* Philistine.
 pistol *m.* letter [L. epistola].
 pleġian *ww.* 2 play.
 pleoh *n.* risk, responsibility.
 plēo-lič *aj.* dangerous, hazardous.
 post *m.* post [L. postis].
 preost *m.* priest [L. presbyter].
 pund *n.* pound [L. pondus].

rā *m. (g. pl. rāna)* roe.
 racen-tēag *f.* chain.
 rād *see* rīdan.
 ġe-*rād* *n.* reckoning, account; reason, judgement.
 ræcan *ww.* 1 reach. 71.
 ġe-*ræcan* *ww.* 1 get at, seize.
 ræd *m.* advice, counsel; what is advisable, plan of action; him ræd pūhte 'it seemed advisable to him'.

rædan *ww.* 1 read.
 ræd-bora *m.* adviser [beran].
 ramm *m.* ram.
 rāp *m.* rope. 13.
 rās *see* risan.
 rēad *aj.* red.
 reahte *see* reccan².
 reccan¹ *ww.* 1 *w. g.* (pret. rōhte) reckon, care. 72.
 reccan² *ww.* 1 (pret. reahte) tell, narrate. 72.
 ġe-*reced-nes* *f.* narrative.
 ġe-*rēfa* *m.* reeve, officer, bailiff, sheriff. 11.
 reġen *m.* rain.
 ġe-*reord* *n.* language.
 rēpe *aj.* fierce, cruel.
 rīce¹ *n.* kingdom; kingship, sovereignty, rule. 16.
 rīce² *aj.* powerful, mighty, of high rank.
 rīcetera *n.* (power), arrogance.
 rīcsian *ww.* 2 rule.
 rīdan *sv.* 1 ride. 62.
 rīf *aj.* fierce.
 rīftera *m.* reaper.
 rīht *aj.* right, just; righteous.
 ġe-*rīhtan* *ww.* 1 correct.
 rīht-wīs *aj.* righteous.
 rīht-wīs-nes *f.* righteousness.
 rīm *mn.* number.
 rīnan *ww.* 1 rain [reġen].
 rīpan *sv.* 1 reap. 62.
 rīpera *m.* reaper.
 rīp-tīma *m.* (reaping-time), harvest.
 rīsan *sv.* 1 rise. 62.
 rōd *f.* cross. 17.
 rōhte *see* reccan¹.
 Rōmāne *m. pl.* Romans.
 rōwan *sv.* 7 row. 68.

sacan *sv.* 6 quarrel. 67.
 sǣ *mf. (d. sg. sǣ)* sea.
 sǣd *n.* seed.
 sǣgd, -e, -on, sǣġþ *see* secgan.
 sǣl *m.* time, occasion.
 ġe-*sǣlig* *aj.* happy, blessed.
 ġe-*sǣlig-lice* *av.* happily, blessedly.
 sǣt, sǣton *see* sittan.

- sæ-wiht** *f.* sea-animal.
sāgol *m.* rod, staff.
ġe-samnian *ww.* 2 *tr.* collect, assemble.
samod *av.* together, also, as well.
sanct *m., sancte f.* saint [*L.* sanctus, -a].
sand *f.* dish of food [*sendan*].
sand-ċeosol *m.* sand (*lit.* sand-gravel).
sār *n.* pain, soreness.
sārig *aj.* sorry, sorrowful, sad.
sāwan *sv.* 7 sow. 68.
sāwe *see* sēon.
sāwol *f.* soul. 17.
sāwon *see* sēon.
scacan *sv.* 6 shake. 67.
scadu *f.* shade.
scamu *f.* shame; tō scame 'with ignominy'.
scarfian *ww.* 2 scrape, shred.
scēaf¹ *m.* sheaf, bundle.
scēaf² *see* scūfan.
scēaf-mælum *av.* in sheaves. 82.
sceal *ppv.* ought to, have to, must; shall. 77, 92, 94.
scēap *n.* sheep. 15.
sceatt *m.* (tribute), money; coin.
scēawere *m.* witness.
ġe-scēawian *ww.* 2 look at; examine, observe; read. 73.
scēawung *f.* seeing, examination.
scēotan *sv.* 2 shoot. 63.
scieldan *ww.* 1 protect.
ġe-scieppan *sv.* 6 create. 67.
scieran *sv.* 4 cut. 65.
scinan *sv.* 1 shine. 62.
scip *n.* ship. 15.
scip-here *m.* fleet.
scir *f.* shire. 17.
scofen *see* scūfan.
scolde, scoldon *see* sceal.
scōp *see* scieppan.
scoren *see* scieran.
Scot-land *n.* Ireland.
Scottas *m. pl.* Scots, Irish.
scotung *f.* shooting, shot; mis-sile.
scræf *n.* cave.
ġe-scrēpe *aj.* fit, suitable.
scrin *n.* shrine [*L.* scrinium].
scrinan *sv.* 3 shrink. 64.
scūfan *sv.* 2 push. 63.
sculon *see* sceal.
scuton *see* scēotan.
scylen *see* sceal.
scypen *f.* cattle-shed.
se, sē *prn. art.* that; the; he; *rel.* who. 47.
seah *see* sēon.
sealde *see* sellan.
sealt-sēap *m.* salt spring.
sēap *m.* pit; well.
Seaxe *m. pl.* Saxons. 14.
sēcan *ww.* 1 seek; visit, come to, go to; attack. 72.
ġe-sēcan *ww.* 1 come to, invade.
secgan *ww.* 3 say. 74.
seldan *av.* seldom.
sēlest *av. sp.* best. 37.
self *prn.* self, my-, him- (&c.) self; *aj.* same; very. 45.
ġe-sellan *ww.* 1 give; sell. 70, 72.
semninga *av.* suddenly.
senġan *ww.* 1 send. 70, 71.
sēo *see* se.
seofon *num.* seven.
seofopa *aj.* seventh.
seolcen *aj.* silken.
seolfor *n.* silver.
seolh *m.* seal.
sēon *sv.* 5 see. 60, 66.
ġe-sēon *sv.* 5 see; catch sight of; look.
sēopan *sv.* 2 boil. 63.
sēow, sēowe *see* sāwan.
setl *n.* (seat), place to live, habitation.
ġe-set-nes *f.* decree, law; narrative [*settan*].
ġe-settan *ww.* 1 set, place; appoint; establish; occupy; compose. 71.
sewen *see* sēon.
sibb *f.* peace.
sīe *see* wesan.
sierwung *f.* artifice, treachery.
siex *num.* six.
siexta *aj.* sixth.
siex-tīene *num.* sixteen.

siex-tig *num.* sixty.

siġe *m.* victory; **siġe niman** 'gain the victory'. 13.

siġe-fæst *aj.* victorious. 29.

ġe-sihþ *f.* sight; vision, dream [ġesēon].

silfren *aj.* silver.

simle *av.* always, ever, continually.

sind(on) *see* **wesan**.

sinu *f.* sinew.

sittan *sv.* 5 sit; settle, stay. 66.

ġe-sittan *sv.* 5 take possession of, occupy.

sip *m.* journey.

sip-fæt *mn.* journey; way.

sipian *ww.* 2 journey, go.

sipþan *av.* afterwards, since, then; *cj.* after, when.

slægen *see* **slēan**.

slæp *m.* sleep; on **slæpe** 'asleep'.

slæpan *sv.* 7 sleep. 68.

slāw *aj.* slow, slothful.

slēan *sv.* 6 strike; slay, kill. 67.

slecġ *m.* hammer [slēan].

sleġe *m.* killing, slaughter [slēan]. 13.

slēp, slēpon *see* **slæpan**.

slitan *sv.* 1 tear. 62.

slōġ, slōġon *see* **slēan**.

smale *av.* small, finely.

smēaġan *ww.* 2 consider, think. 73.

smēocan *sv.* 2 smoke. 63.

smylt-nes *f.* mildness.

snāw *m.* snow.

snican *sv.* 1 creep. 62.

snipþan *sv.* 1 cut. 62.

sniwan *ww.* 1 snow.

snotor *aj.* wise, prudent.

sōcan *see* **sacan**.

sōhte, sōhton *see* **sēcan**.

sōna *av.* at once, then; **sōna swā, sōna þæs þe** 'as soon as'.

sorġ *f.* sorrow.

sōþ¹ *n.* truth.

sōþ² *aj.* true.

sōþ-liċe *av.* truly, indeed; in reality.

spadu *f.* spade [*L.* **spatha**].

spearwa *m.* sparrow.

spell *n.* narrative, discourse.

spōwan *sv.* 7 succeed. 68.

spræc *f.* speech, language; conversation [sprecan]. 17.

sprecan *sv.* 5 speak. 66.

sprengan *ww.* 1 (scatter), sow [springan].

springan *sv.* 3 spring. 64.

stæf *m.* staff; letter of the alphabet. 13.

stæf-cræft *m.* the art of letters, grammar.

stānen *aj.* (of) stone [stān].

stān *m.* stone, rock. 13.

standan *sv.* 6 stand. 67.

steall *mn.* position, site.

stede *m.* place. 13, 14.

stefn *f.* voice.

stelan *sv.* 4 steal. 65.

stent, stentst *see* **standan**.

steorra *m.* star. 11.

stieran *ww.* 1 *w. d.* restrain.

stigan *sv.* 1 ascend. 62.

ġe-stillan *ww.* 1 stop, restrain.

stōd, stōdon *see* **standan**.

storm *m.* storm, tempest.

stōw *f.* place; passage (in a book); religious house. 17.

stræl *fm.* arrow.

stræt *f.* street, road [*L.* **strata** (*uia*)].

strang *aj.* strong, powerful; *cp.* **strengra**. 32.

strēdan *ww.* 1 strew, scatter, sow.

strengra *see* **strang**.

strengþu *f.* strength [strang]. 20.

ġe-strēon *n.* (acquisition), possession.

ġe-striēnan *ww.* 1 gain [ġe-strēon].

strūtian *ww.* 2 struggle (? — *note on VI, 171*).

styċce *n.* piece. 16.

sum *prn. aj.* a certain (one), one, a; some. 29, 51.

sumor *m.* (*d. sg.* **sumera**, -e) summer. 13.

Sumor-sæte *m. pl.* men of Somerset. 14.

sund *n.* swimming.

ġe-sund *aj.* sound, healthy; uncorrupted.

ge-sund-full *aj.* safe and sound.
sunne *f.* sun. 11.
sunu *m.* son. 19.
sūþ *av.* south, southwards.
sūþan *av.* from the south.
sūþ-dæl *m.* southern part, south.
Sūþ-peohtas *m. pl.* Southern Picts.
Sūþriġe *m. pl.* (the people of) Surrey.
Sūþ-seaxe *m. pl.* South Saxons.
swā *av.* so; as; **swā swā** as, like;
swā . . . swā *correl.* as . . . as;
swā þæt so that, inasmuch as.
swāc *see* swīcan.
swāsendu *n. pl.* food, meal.
swā-þeah *av.* however, nevertheless.
swefn *n.* sleep; dream.
swelc *prn.* such.
swelce *av.* as if, as it were, as, like; likewise; **swelce ēac** 'also, moreover'.
sweltan *sv.* 3 die. 64.
swenčan *ww.* 1 afflict, harass [swincan].
sweng *m.* stroke, blow [swingan].
swēor *m.* pillar.
swēora *m.* neck. 11.
sweord *n.* sword.
sweord-bora *m.* sword-bearer [beran].
sweostor *f.* sister. 23.
ge-sweostor *f. pl.* sisters.
sweotol *aj.* clear, evident, manifest.
ge-sweotolian *ww.* 2 show, indicate.
sweotolung *f.* sign, manifestation.
swerian *sv.* 6 swear. 67.
swēte *aj.* sweet.
ge-swīcan *sv.* 1 (fail, fall short), cease; betray. 62.
swīc-dōm *m.* deceit, fraud [swīcan].
swicol *aj.* deceitful, treacherous.
swift *aj.* swift.
swigian *ww.* 2 be silent.
swimman *sv.* 3 swim. 64.
swincan *sv.* 3 labour, toil. 64.
swingan *sv.* 3 beat, scourge. 64.

swingel *f.* stroke [swingan].
swipu *f.* whip, scourge.
swīpe *av.* very, much, greatly, strongly, violently; *cp.* **swīpor** rather, more.
swīþ-lič *aj.* very great, immense.
swulton *see* sweltan.
swuncon *see* swincan.
swungon *see* swingan.
sýfer-liče *av.* with purity, chastely.
synder-liče *av.* separately.
syndriġ *aj.* separate.
ge-syntu *f.* (health), prosperity.

tācen *n.* sign, token; miracle.
ge-tācnian *ww.* 2 signify, be-token.
ge-tācnung *f.* signification; pre-sage.
ge-tācan *ww.* 1 teach; show. 70, 71.
tære, tæron *see* teran.
taluf *f.* tale. 17.
tam *aj.* tame.
tāwian *ww.* 2 afflict, ill-treat.
tēah *see* tēon.
teald, tealde *see* tellan.
telg *m.* dye.
tellan *ww.* 1 count, account; tellan tō nāhte 'count as nothing' [taluf]. 72.
Temes *f.* Thames [*L.* Tamesis].
tempel *n.* temple [*L.* templum].
tēon *sv.* 2 draw, pull, drag. 63.
tēona *m.* injury; insult. 11.
tēon-ræden *f.* humiliation.
tēopa *aj.* tenth.
teran *sv.* 4 tear. 65.
tēþ *see* tōþ.
tičcen *n.* kid.
tīd *f.* time; hour. 18.
tīegan *ww.* 1 tie.
tīen *num.* ten.
til *aj.* good.
tīma *m.* time. 11.
ge-timbrian *ww.* 2 build. 73.
tintreg *n.* torture.
tintregian *ww.* 2 torture.
tīþian *ww.* 2 *w. d.* of person and *g.* of thing grant, agree to.

tō *prp. w. d. (i.) and (rarely) g. (av.)* motion to; time at: **tō** midre nihte 'at midnight'; for: **tō** langre fierste 'for a long time'; *purpose, destination* for, as, towards: **tō** abbode gesett 'appointed abbot'; **tō** **þæs** (to that degree), so; **tō** **þæm** **þæt**, **tō** **þon** **þæt** in order that. 87.
tō-berstan *sv.* 3 burst, break asunder.
tō-brecan *sv.* 4 break apart.
tō-bregdan *sv.* 3 tear to pieces, pull apart.
tō-cyme *m.* coming [cuman].
tō-dæg *av.* today.
tō-dælan *ww.* 1 separate, divide [tō-dāl].
tō-dæled *aj.* separate, diverse [*p. pt. of* tōdælan].
tō-dāl *n.* separation, difference.
tō-gēanes *prp. w. d.* towards; him to gēanes 'to meet him'. 96.
tōgen *see* tēon.
tōl *n.* tool, implement.
tō-middes *prp. w. d.* in the midst of.
torr *m.* tower [L. turris].
tō-samne *av.* together.
tō-teran *sv.* 4 tear to pieces.
tōþ *m.* tooth. 22.
tō-weard *aj.* future, to come.
tō-weorpan *sv.* 3 overthrow, destroy.
trēow *n.* tree.
trēow-cynn *n.* kind of tree.
ge-trēowe *aj.* true, faithful.
trēowian *ww.* 2 *w. d.* trust in.
trimes *mf.* drachm [L. tremissis].
trum *aj.* strong.
trymman *ww.* 1 strengthen [trum]. 71.
trymning *f.* strengthening, encouragement, confirmation.
tū *see* twēgen.
tūcian *ww.* 2 ill-treat, harass, afflict.
tugon *see* tēon.
tūn *m.* (enclosure); estate, dwelling; village, settlement. 13.
tunge *f.* tongue. 11.
twā, twām *see* twēgen.

twēgen *num.* two. 39.

twelf *num.* twelve.

twentig *num.* twenty.

twēo *m.* doubt. 11.

þā¹ *av. cj.* then; when; **þā** **þā** when; **þā** . . . **þā** *correl.* when . . . (then). 99.

þā² *see* se. 47.

þæm *see* se.

þær *av.* there; *anticipatory* **þær** blēowon windas, &c.; *combined with prps.* it, that; **þær-tō**, &c. 'thereto, to it, in it, there'; *cj. (also* **þær** **þær**) where.

þære *see* se.

þær-rihte *av.* immediately.

þæs *g. of* **þæt**, *see* se; *used as av.* afterwards, from that time; therefore; **þæs** **þe** *cj.* after.

þæt¹ *cj.* that; so that; until.

þæt² *see* se.

ge-þafian *ww.* 2 allow, permit, consent.

ge-þafung *f.* consent.

þancian *ww.* 2 *w. d. of person and g. of thing* thank.

þanon *av.* thence, from there, away.

þāra *see* se.

þās *see* þes.

þe *rel. prn. indecl.* who, which; *cj.* when; **þe** . . . **þe** (whether) . . . or.

þē *see* þū.

þēah *av.* though, yet, however; *cj. (also* **þēah** **þe**) although.

ge-þeaht *fn.* advice; counsel, consultation.

ge-þeahtere *m.* counsellor.

þearf¹ *f.* need.

þearf² *ppv.* need. 77.

þearle *av.* very, greatly, thoroughly.

þēaw *m.* custom, habit; *pl.* virtues, morality.

þegen *m.* servant, retainer, thane. 13.

þegnian *ww.* 2 *w. d.* serve.

þencan *ww.* 1 think, expect. 72.

þēod *f.* people, nation. 17.

ge-þēodan *ww.* 1 join, attach oneself to.

ġe-*þēode* *n.* language. 16.
þeof *m.* thief.
þēon *sv.* 1 prosper. 62.
þēos *see* *þes*.
þēostru *n. pl.* darkness.
þēow *m.* servant. 13.
þēowa *m.* servant. 11.
þēow-dōm *m.* service.
þēowot *n.* servitude.
þes *prn. aj.* this. 48.
picce *aj.* thick, dense; *av.* thickly, closely.
picgan *sv.* 5 take, receive; eat, drink. 66.
pider *av.* thither, there.
þin *prn. aj.* thy, thine, your, yours. 43.
þinen *f.* maidservant [*þegen*].
þing *n.* thing, affair, condition, circumstance. 15.
þis, þisse, þissum, &c. *see* *þes*.
þōhte *see* *þencan*.
þon, þone *see* *se*.
þonne¹ *av. cj.* then; when; now.
þonne² *cj.* than.
þorifte *see* *þearf²*.
þræd *m.* thread.
þrēo *see* *þrie*.
þrida *aj.* third.
þrie *num.* three. 39.
þrim *see* *þrie*.
þritig *num.* thirty.
þrymm *m.* glory.
þū *prn.* thou, you. 43.
þūht, þūhte *see* *þyncan*.
ġe-þungen *aj.* excellent, virtuous.
þurh *prp. w. a.* through, by; throughout.
þurh-flēogan *sv.* 2 fly through.
þurh-wunian *ww.* 2 continue, remain.
þurst *m.* thirst.
þus *av.* thus.
þusend *n.* thousand. 40.
ġe-þwær-læcan *ww.* 1 agree, consent. 82.
þy *instr. of se, þæt; used as av.* therefore; *cj.* because.
þyfel *m.* bush.
þy-læs (þe) *cj. w. subj.* lest [*læs* 'less'].

þylliċ *aj.* such [*þys-liċ*].
þyncan *ww.* 1 seem; *often impers. ww. d.:* *mē þyncþ* 'it seems to me'; *sometimes in passive:* *wæs him ġeþūht* 'it seemed to him' [*þencan*]. 72.
þyrel *u.* hole [*þurh*].
uſe-weard *aj.* upper, at the top of.
un-ā-rīmed-liċ *aj.* innumerable; countless [*rīm*].
unc *see* *iċ*.
un-cūþ *aj.* unknown.
un-ġe-cynde *aj.* not of royal stock.
under *prp. w. d. a.* under; in the circumstances of.
under-be-ġinnan *sv.* 3 undertake.
under-cyning *m.* under-king, tributary king.
under-delfan *sv.* 3 dig under.
under-fōn *sv.* 7 receive, take.
under-ġeat *see* *under-ġietan*.
under-ġietan *sv.* 5 understand, perceive. 66.
undern-tīd *f.* the third hour of the day, 9 a.m.
under-standan *sv.* 6 understand.
un-forht *aj.* unafraid, dauntless.
un-for-molsnod *aj. (p. pt.)* undecayed.
un-ġlēaw *aj. w. g.* ignorant.
un-hālgod *aj. (p. pt.)* unconsecrated.
un-hiere *aj.* savage, frightful, monstrous.
un-hier-liċ *aj.* savage, frightful.
un-ġe-hier-sum *aj. w. d.* disobedient.
un-hold *aj.* hostile.
un-ġe-læred *aj.* uneducated, ignorant.
un-lūcan *sv.* 2 unlock.
un-ġe-met-liċ *aj.* immense [*metan*].
un-mihtig *aj.* weak, powerless.
un-nytt *aj.* useless, unprofitable.
un-rīm *n.* countless number.
un-ġe-sælig *aj.* unhappy, accursed.

un-tiemende *aj.* barren [*pres. pt. of tieman 'bring forth'*].

un-ge-pwær-nes *f.* discord.

un-wis *aj. w. g.* ignorant, uninformed.

un-wittig *aj.* innocent, simple; foolish.

un-writere *m.* bad, inaccurate scribe.

ūp *av.* up.

ūp-ā-hefed-nes *f.* conceit, arrogance.

ūp-flōr *f. (d. sg. -a)* upper floor, upper story.

uppan *prp. w. d.* on, upon.

ūre *prn. aj.* our, ours. 42, 46.

urnon *see iernan.*

ūs *see ic.*

ūt *av.* out.

ūtan *av.* from outside.

ūtane *av.* from outside.

ūtterra *aj. ap.* outer. 34.

wacian *vv.* 2 be awake, watch.

wædla *m.* poor man.

wæg *f.* weight.

wæl *n.* slaughter, carnage; *miðel wæl* *geslēan* 'do great slaughter'.

wæl-hrēow *aj.* cruel.

wæl-hrēow-liçe *av.* cruelly, savagely.

wæl-hrēow-nes *f.* cruelty.

wāpen *n.* weapon, arm. 15.

wāpned-cynn *n.* male line.

wāron, wæs *see wesan.*

wæstm *m.* (growth), fruit.

wæter *n.* water. 15.

wæter-scipe *m.* piece of water, water.

wāfung *f.* (spectacle), display.

wana *aj. indecl., w. numerals* wanting, less.

-ware *m. pl. (only in composition)* dwellers, inhabitants [*orig. 'defenders', cf. werian*].

wāt *see witan.*

wē *see ic.*

weahte *see wecčan.*

weald *m.* forest. 13.

ge-weald *n.* power, control; *ic nāh geweald* 'I cannot help it'.

ge-wealdan *sv.* 7 *w. g. or a.* rule, control, have power over. 68.

wealdend *m.* ruler, lord (*often of God*).

Wealh *m. (pl. Wēalas)* Briton, Welshman (*orig. foreigner*).

weall *m.* wall [*L. uallum*].

weallan *sv.* 7 boil; swarm. 68.

weardere *m.* (keeper), dweller.

wearg *m.* felon, criminal [*orig. wolf, then outlaw*].

wearm *aj.* warm.

ge-wearmian *vv.* 2 get warm.

wearnian *vv.* 2 warn, caution.

wearp *see weorpan.*

wearþ *see weorþan.*

weaxan *sv.* 7 grow, increase. 68.

wecčan *vv.* 1 wake. 72.

wecg *m.* (mass of) metal.

weg *m.* way, road, path. 13.

wel *av.* well; *cp. bet, sēl, sp. betst, sēlest.* 37.

weler *m.* lip.

wellg *aj.* rich.

wel-willend-nes *f.* benevolence.

wēn *f.* hope. 18.

wēnan *vv.* 1 think, expect.

ge-wendan *vv.* 1 turn; go; return [*windan*]. 71.

wēofod *n.* altar.

weoloc *m.* whelk, murex.

weoloc-rēad *aj.* scarlet, purple.

weoloc-sciell *f.* whelk, shellfish.

weorc *n.* work, deed, act.

ge-weorc *n.* fortification.

weorpan *sv.* 3 throw. 64.

weorþ *n.* worth, value.

weorþan *sv.* 3 become; happen; *wurdon* *æt sprāce* 'talked together'. 64.

ge-weorþan *sv.* 3 *impers. w. d. a.* him *gewearþ* 'they agreed upon'; hine *gewierþ* 'he pleases'.

weorþ-full *aj.* worthy, honourable.

weorþian *vv.* 2 honour, worship; exalt. 73.

weorþ-liçe *av.* (honourably), splendidly.

weorþ-mynd *fn.* honour.

weorþ-nes *f.* honour; splendour.

wēox, wēoxon *see* **weaxan**.
wēpan *sv.* 7 weep. 68.
wer *m.* man. 13.
werian *ww.* 1 defend. 70, 71.
werod *n.* troop, army, force. 15.
wesan *v.* be. 78.
west *av.* westwards.
west-dæl *m.* western part, west.
wēste *aj.* waste, desolate, deserted.
West-seaxe *m. pl.* West Saxons, people of Wessex. 14.
wīc *n.* dwelling; *pl.* camp.
wīcian *ww.* 2 (dwell); camp, be encamped.
wīcing *m.* viking, pirate [wīc].
wīc-stōw *f.* (often *pl.*) camp.
wīcu *f.* week. 17.
wīd *aj.* wide.
wīde *av.* widely, far and wide.
widewe *f.* widow.
ġe-wieldan *ww.* 1 overpower, conquer [wealdan].
wiell *m.* spring, fountain.
wiellan *ww.* 1 *tr.* boil [weallan].
wiell-ġe-spring *n.* spring.
wielt *see* **wealdan**.
wierdan *ww.* 1 injure, damage.
wierman *ww.* 1 warm [wearm].
wierpe *aj. w. g.* worthy, deserving [weorþ].
wīf *n.* woman; wife. 9, 15.
wīf-cynn *n.* female line.
wīf-mann *m.* woman. 9.
wiht *f.* creature; thing.
Wiht *f.* the Isle of Wight [*L. Uectis*].
Wiht-ware *m. pl.* people of Wight.
wildēor *n.* wild beast.
willa *m.* will, desire; hiera **willum** 'of their own accord'.
willan *v.* will, wish. 79, 92.
ġe-wilnian *ww.* 2 *w. g.* desire.
wīn *n.* wine [*L. uinum*].
wind *m.* wind. 13.
windan *sv.* 3 wind. 64.
wine *m.* friend. 13, 14.
wīn-ġeard *m.* vineyard.
ġe-winn *n.* warfare, conflict.
winnan *sv.* 3 fight. 64.
ġe-winnan *sv.* 3 win, gain.

winter *mn. (d. sg. wintra, nom. pl. winter)* winter; *in reckoning time* year. 13.
winter-setl *n.* winter quarters.
winter-tīd *f.* winter-time.
wīs *aj.* wise.
wīs-dām *m.* wisdom, knowledge, learning.
wise *f.* (wise), way; matter, thing; usage, idiom. 11.
wīs-lič *aj.* wise, prudent.
ġe-wīssian *ww.* 2 *w. d. or a.* guide, direct.
ġe-wiss-lič *aj.* certain, sure.
wissung *f.* guidance, direction.
wiste, wiston *see* **witan**.
wit *see* **ič**.
wita *m.* councillor, adviser, sage. 11.
witan *v.* know. 76.
ġe-witan *sv.* 1 depart, go. 62.
wīte *n.* punishment. 16.
wītega *m.* prophet, sage.
witod-liče *av.* truly, indeed; and [witan].
ġe-witon *see* **ġe-witan**.
ġe-witt *n.* wits, intelligence, understanding [witan].
wīp *prp. w. d. a.* towards; hostility against; association, sharing with; exchange, price for, in consideration of; **wīp þām þe** provided, on consideration, that.
wīp-meten-nes *f.* comparison [metan].
wīp-sacan *sv.* 6 *w. d.* deny, renounce, forsake.
wīp-standan *sv.* 6 *w. d.* withstand, resist.
wīte *m.* beauty, splendour.
wōd *aj.* mad.
wōd-liče *av.* madly.
wōh *n.* wrong, error.
wolde, woldon *see* **willan**.
wōp *m.* weeping [wēpan].
word *n.* word; sentence; subject of talk, question, answer, report.
worden *see* **weorþan**.
worht, -e, -on *see* **wyrčan**.
worpen *see* **weorþan**.

woruld *f.* world.

wōs *n.* juice.

wrecan *sv.* 5 avenge. 66.

wrēgan *ww.* 1 accuse, bring a charge against.

wringan *sv.* 3 wring. 64.

ge-writ *n.* writing; letter [writan].

writan *sv.* 1 write. 62.

writere *m.* writer, scribe.

wudu *m.* wood. 19.

wuldor *n.* glory.

wuldrian *ww.* 2 glorify, extol.

wulf *m.* wolf.

wull *f.* wool.

ge-wuna *m.* habit, custom. 11.

wund *f.* wound.

wundor *n.* wonder, miracle. 15.

wundor-lič *aj.* wonderful, wonderful.

wundor-liče *av.* wonderfully, in a miraculous way.

wundrian *ww.* 2 *w. g.* wonder, marvel.

ge-wune-lič *aj.* customary, habitual.

wunian *ww.* 2 dwell, live; stay, continue [gewuna]. 73.

ge-wunnen *see* ge-winnan.

wunung *f.* dwelling.

wurde, wurdon *see* weorpan.

wurpon *see* weorpan.

wynn *f.* joy. 18.

ge-wyrčan *ww.* 1 work, make; build; do, perform, carry out [weorc]. 72.

wyrd *f.* fate. 18.

wyrhta *m.* worker, labourer. 11.

wyrm *m.* (worm), serpent.

wyrt *f.* herb, plant; crop. 18.

wyrt-truma *m.* root.

ge-wyscan *ww.* 1 *w. g.* wish (for).

yfel¹ *n.* evil, wrong.

yfel² *aj.* evil, bad. 29, 33.

yfle *av.* badly. 37.

ymb, ymbe *prp. w. a.* around; time about; *bēon ymbe* 'have to do with'.

ymb-ærnian *ww.* 1 travel round, circumnavigate.

ymb-sittan *sv.* 5 surround, besiege.

ymb-ūtan *av.* round about.

ȳterra *aj. cp.* outer; *sp. ȳtemest* outermost, last [ūt]. 34.

ȳþ *f.* wave.

PRINTED IN
GREAT BRITAIN
AT THE
UNIVERSITY PRESS
OXFORD
BY
CHARLES BATEY
PRINTER
TO THE
UNIVERSITY

